**LOPE DE VEGA  
*La Dama Boba***

Personajes:

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| *LISEO, caballero* |  |
| *TURÍN, lacayo* |  |
| *LEANDRO, caballero* |  |
| *OTAVIO, viejo* |  |
| *MISENO, su amigo* |  |
| *LAURENCIO, caballero* |  |
| *DUARDO, caballero* |  |
| *FENISO, caballero* |  |
| *RUFINO, maestro* |  |
| *NISE, dama* |  |
| *FINEA, su hermana* |  |
| *CLARA, criada* |  |
| *CELIA, criada* |  |
| *PEDRO, lacayo* |  |
| *MÚSICOS* |  |
| *UN MAESTRO de danzar* |  |

**Acto I**

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **I** | |
|  | |
| *Portal de una posada en Illescas* |  |
|  | |
| *LISEO, caballero, y TURÍN, lacayo; los dos de camino* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¡Qué lindas posadas! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Frescas! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¿No hay calor? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Chinches y ropa |  | | tienen fama en toda Europa. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Famoso lugar Illescas! |  | | No hay en todos los que miras | 5 | | quien le iguale. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aun si supieses |  | | la causa... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¿Cuál es? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Dos meses |  | | de guindas y de mentiras. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Como aquí, Turín, se juntan |  | | de la Corte y de Sevilla, | 10 | | Andalucía y Castilla, |  | | unos a otros preguntan, |  | | unos de las Indias cuentan, |  | | y otros con discursos largos |  | | de provisiones y cargos, | 15 | | cosas que el vulgo alimentan. |  | | ¿No tomaste las medidas? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Una docena tomé. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¿Y imágenes? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Con la fe |  | | que son de España admitidas, | 20 | | por milagrosas en todo |  | | cuanto en cualquiera ocasión |  | | les pide la devoción |  | | y el nombre. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, dese modo, |  | | lleguen las postas, y vamos. | 25 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  | | --- | | ¿No has de comer? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aguardar |  | | a que se guise es pensar |  | | que a media noche llegamos; |  | | y un desposado, Turín, |  | | ha de llegar cuando pueda | 30 | | lucir. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Muy atrás se queda |  | | con el repuesto Marín; |  | | pero yo traigo qué comas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¿Qué traes? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya lo verás. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | Dilo. | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  | | --- | | ¡Guarda! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Necio estás. | 35 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Desto pesadumbre tomas? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, para decir lo que es... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hay a quien pesa de oír |  | | su nombre. Basta decir |  | | que tú lo sabrás después. | 40 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Entretiénesela hambre |  | | con saber qué ha de comer? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues sábete que ha de ser... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¡Presto! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ...tocino fiambre. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿a quién puede pesar | 45 | | de oír nombre tan hidalgo? |  | | Turín, si me has de dar algo, |  | | ¿qué cosa me puedes dar |  | | que tenga igual a ese nombre? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Esto y una hermosa caja. | 50 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Dame de queso una raja; |  | | que nunca el dulce es muy hombre. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Esas liciones no son |  | | de galán ni desposado. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aún agora no he llegado. | 55 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Las damas de Corte son |  | | todas un fino cristal: |  | | transparentes y divinas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Turín, las más cristalinas |  | | comerán. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Es natural! | 60 | | Pero esta hermosa Finea |  | | con quien a casarte vas |  | | comerá... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | Dilo. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No más |  | | de azúcar, maná y jalea. |  | | Pasaráse una semana | 65 | | con dos puntos en el aire, |  | | de azúcar. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Gentil donaire! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué piensas dar a su hermana? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | A Nise, su hermana bella, |  | | una rosa de diamantes, | 70 | | que así tengan los amantes |  | | tales firmezas con ella; |  | | y una cadena también, |  | | que compite con la rosa. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Dicen que es también hermosa. | 75 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Mi esposa parece bien, |  | | si doy crédito a la fama, |  | | de su hermana poco sé; |  | | pero basta que me dé |  | | lo que más se estima y ama. | 80 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Bello golpe de dinero! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Son cuarenta mil ducados. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  | | --- | | ¡Bravo dote! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si contados |  | | los llego a ver, como espero. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De un macho con guarniciones | 85 | | verdes y estribos de palo, |  | | se apea un hidalgo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Malo, |  | | si la merienda me pones! |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **II** | |
|  | |
| *LEANDRO, de camino* |  |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LEANDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Huésped, ¿habrá qué comer? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Seáis, señor, bien llegado. | 90 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LEANDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y vos en la misma hallado. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¿A Madrid?... | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LEANDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Dejéle ayer, |  | | cansado de no salir |  | | con pretensiones cansadas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Esas van adjetivadas | 95 | | con esperar y sufrir. |  | | Holgara, por ir con vos, |  | | lleváramos un camino. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LEANDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si vais a lo que imagino, |  | | nunca lo permita Dios. | 100 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No llevo qué pretender; |  | | a negocios hechos voy. |  | | ¿Sois de ese lugar? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LEANDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sí soy. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Luego podréis conocer |  | | la persona que os nombrare. | 105 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LEANDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Es Madrid una talega |  | | de piezas, donde se anega |  | | cuanto su máquina pare. |  | | Los reyes, roques y arfiles |  | | conocidas casas tienen; | 110 | | los demás que van y vienen |  | | son como peones viles: |  | | todo es allí confusión. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No es Otavio pieza vil. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LEANDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si es quien yo pienso, es arfil, | 115 | | y pieza de estimación. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Quien yo digo es padre noble |  | | de dos hijas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LEANDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya sé quién; |  | | pero dijérades bien |  | | que de una palma y de un roble. | 120 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¿Cómo? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LEANDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que entrambas lo son; |  | | pues Nise bella es la palma; |  | | Finea un roble, sin alma |  | | y discurso de razón. |  | | Nise es mujer tan discreta, | 125 | | sabia, gallarda, entendida, |  | | cuanto Finea encogida, |  | | boba, indigna y imperfeta. |  | | Y aun pienso que oí tratar |  | | que la casaban... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | *[A Turín]* | | ¿No escuchas? | 130 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LEANDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Verdad es que no habrá muchas |  | | que la puedan igualar |  | | en el riquísimo dote; |  | | mas, ¡ay de aquel desdichado |  | | que espera una bestia al lado! | 135 | | Pues más de algún marquesote, |  | | a codicia del dinero, |  | | pretende la bobería |  | | desta dama, y a porfía |  | | hacen su calle terrero. | 140 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | *[A Turín]* | | Yo llevo lindo concierto. |  | | ¡A gentiles vistas voy! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  | | --- | | *[A Liseo]* | | Disimula. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | *[A Turín]* | | Tal estoy, |  | | que apenas hablar acierto. |  | | En fin, señor, ¿Nise es bella | 145 | | y discreta?... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LEANDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Es celebrada |  | | por única, y deseada, |  | | por las partes que hay en ella, |  | | de gente muy principal. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Tan necia es esa Finea? | 150 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LEANDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Mucho sentís que lo sea. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Contemplo, de sangre igual, |  | | dos cosas tan desiguales... |  | | Mas, ¿cómo en dote lo son? |  | | Que, hermanas, fuera razón | 155 | | que los tuvieran iguales. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LEANDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Oigo decir que un hermano |  | | de su padre la dejó |  | | esta hacienda, porque vio |  | | que sin ella fuera en vano | 160 | | casarla con hombre igual |  | | de su noble nacimiento, |  | | supliendo el entendimiento |  | | con el oro. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Él hizo mal. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LEANDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Antes bien, porque con esto | 165 | | tan discreta vendrá a ser |  | | como Nise. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Has de comer? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ponme lo que dices, presto, |  | | aunque ya puedo escusallo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LEANDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Mandáis, señor, otra cosa? | 170 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Serviros. (¡Qué linda esposa!) |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **III** | |
|  | |
| *TURÍN, LISEO* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  | | --- | | ¿Qué haremos? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ponte a caballo, |  | | que ya no quiero comer. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No te aflijas, pues no es hecho. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que me ha de matar, sospecho, | 175 | | si es necia, y propia mujer. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Como tú no digas «sí», |  | | ¿quién te puede cautivar? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Verla no me ha de matar, |  | | aunque es basilisco en mí. | 180 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  | | --- | | No, señor. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | También advierte |  | | que, siendo tan entendida |  | | Nise, me dará la vida, |  | | si ella me diere la muerte. |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **IV** | |
|  | |
| *Sala en casa de OTAVIO en Madrid* |  |
|  | |
| *Salgan OTAVIO, viejo, y MISENO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Esa fue la intención que tuvo Fabio. | 185 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  | | --- | | Parece que os quejáis. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Bien mal emplea |  | | mi hermano tanta hacienda! No fue sabio. |  | | Bien es que Fabio, y que no sabio, sea. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si en dejaros hacienda os hizo agravio, |  | | vos propio lo juzgad. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Dejó a Finea, | 190 | | a título de simple, tan gran renta, |  | | que a todos, hasta agora, nos sustenta. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Dejóla a la que más le parecía |  | | de sus sobrinas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Vos andáis discreto; |  | | pues, a quien heredó su bobería, | 195 | | dejó su hacienda para el mismo efeto. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De Nise la divina gallardía, |  | | las altas esperanzas y el conceto |  | | os deben de tener apasionado. |  | | ¿Quién duda que le sois más inclinado? | 200 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Mis hijas son entrambas; mas yo os juro |  | | que me enfadan y cansan, cada una |  | | por su camino, cuando más procuro |  | | mostrar amor y inclinación a alguna. |  | | Si ser Finea simple es caso duro, | 205 | | ya lo suplen los bienes de Fortuna |  | | y algunos que le dio Naturaleza, |  | | siempre más liberal de la belleza; |  | | pero ver tan discreta y arrogante |  | | a Nise, más me pudre y martiriza, | 210 | | y que de bien hablada y elegante |  | | el vulgazo la aprueba y soleniza. |  | | Si me casara agora (y no te espante |  | | esta opinión, que alguno lo autoriza), |  | | de dos extremos: boba o bachillera, | 215 | | de la boba elección, sin duda, hiciera. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡No digáis tal, por Dios!; que están sujetas |  | | a no acertar en nada. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Eso es engaño; |  | | que yo no trato aquí de las discretas: |  | | solo a las bachilleras desengaño. | 220 | | De una casada son partes perfetas |  | | virtud y honestidad. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Parir cadaño, |  | | no dijérades mal, si es argumento |  | | de que vos no queréis entendimiento. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Está la discreción de una casada | 225 | | en amar y servir a su marido; |  | | en vivir recogida y recatada, |  | | honesta en el hablar y en el vestido; |  | | en ser de la familia respetada, |  | | en retirar la vista y el oído, | 230 | | en enseñar los hijos, cuidadosa, |  | | preciada más de limpia que de hermosa. |  | | ¿Para qué quiero yo que, bachillera, |  | | la que es propia mujer concetos diga? |  | | Esto de Nise por casar me altera; | 235 | | lo más, como lo menos, me fatiga. |  | | Resuélvome en dos cosas que quisiera, |  | | pues la virtud es bien que el medio siga: |  | | que Finea supiera más que sabe, |  | | y Nise menos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Habláis cuerdo y grave. | 240 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si todos los extremos tienen vicio, |  | | yo estoy, con justa causa, discontento. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  | | --- | | Y, ¿qué hay de vuestro yerno? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aquí el oficio |  | | de padre y dueño alarga el pensamiento: |  | | caso a Finea, que es notable indicio | 245 | | de las leyes del mundo, al oro atento. |  | | Nise, tan sabia, docta y entendida, |  | | apenas halla un hombre que la pida; |  | | y por Finea, simple, por instantes |  | | me solicitan tantos pretendientes | 250 | | -del oro más que del ingenio amantes-, |  | | que me cansan amigos y parientes. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Razones hay, al parecer, bastantes. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Una hallo yo, sin muchas aparentes, |  | | y es el buscar un hombre en todo estado, | 255 | | lo que le falta más, con más cuidado. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  | | --- | | Eso no entiendo bien. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Estadme atento. |  | | Ningún hombre nacido a pensar viene |  | | que le falta, Miseno, entendimiento, |  | | y con esto no busca lo que tiene. | 260 | | Ve que el oro le falta y el sustento, |  | | y piensa que buscalle le conviene, |  | | pues como ser la falta el oro entienda, |  | | deja el entendimiento y busca hacienda. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Piedad del cielo, que ningún nacido | 265 | | se queje de faltarle entendimiento! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues a muchos, que nunca lo han creído, |  | | les falta, y son sus obras argumento. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  | | --- | | Nise es aquesta. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Quítame el sentido |  | | su desvanecimiento. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Un casamiento | 270 | | os traigo yo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Casémosla; que temo |  | | alguna necedad, de tanto extremo. |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **V** | |
|  | |
| *NISE y CELIA, criada* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | ¿Dióte el libro? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y tal, que obliga |  | | a no abrille ni tocalle. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | Pues, ¿por qué? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Por no ensucialle, | 275 | | si quieres que te lo diga. |  | | En cándido pergamino |  | | vienen muchas flores de oro. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Bien lo merece Eliodoro, |  | | griego poeta divino. | 280 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Poeta? Pues parecióme |  | | prosa. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | También hay poesía |  | | en prosa. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No lo sabía. |  | | Miré el principio, y cansóme. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Es que no se da a entender, | 285 | | con el artificio griego, |  | | hasta el quinto libro, y luego |  | | todo se viene a saber |  | | cuanto precede a los cuatro. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | En fin, ¿es poeta en prosa? | 290 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y de una historia amorosa |  | | digna de aplauso y teatro. |  | | Hay dos prosas diferentes: |  | | poética y historial. |  | | La historial, lisa y leal, | 295 | | cuenta verdades patentes, |  | | con frase y términos claros; |  | | la poética es hermosa, |  | | varia, culta, licenciosa, |  | | y escura aun a ingenios raros. | 300 | | Tiene mil exornaciones |  | | y retóricas figuras. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿de cosas tan escuras |  | | juzgan tantos? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No le pones, |  | | Celia, pequeña objeción; | 305 | | pero así corre el engaño |  | | del mundo. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **VI** | |
|  | |
| *FINEA, dama, con unas cartillas, y RUFINO, maestro* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Ni en todo el año |  | | saldré con esa lición! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte a Nise]* | | Tu hermana, con su maestro. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Conoce las letras ya? | 310 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | En los principios está. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Paciencia y no letras muestro! |  | | ¿Qué es esta? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Letra será. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  | | --- | | ¿Letra? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿es otra cosa? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | No, sino el alba. ¡Qué hermosa | 315 | | bestia! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Bien, bien. Sí, ya, ya; |  | | el alba debe de ser, |  | | cuando andaba entre las coles. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ésta es *ca*. Los españoles |  | | no la solemos poner | 320 | | en nuestra lengua jamás. |  | | Úsanlamucho alemanes |  | | y flamencos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Qué galanes |  | | van todos estos detrás! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Estas son letras también. | 325 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Tantas hay? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Veintitrés son. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ahora vaya de lición; |  | | que yo lo diré muy bien. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  | | --- | | ¿Qué es esta? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Aquesta?... No sé. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  | | --- | | ¿Y esta? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No sé qué responda. | 330 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  | | --- | | ¿Y esta? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Cuál? ¿Esta redonda? |  | | ¡Letra! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  | | --- | | ¡Bien! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Luego, ¿acerté? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  | | --- | | ¡Linda bestia! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Así, así! |  | | Bestia, ¡por Dios!, se llamaba; |  | | pero no se me acordaba. | 335 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Esta es *erre*, y esta es *i*. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿si tú lo traes errado...? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Con qué pesadumbre están! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Di aquí: *b*, *a*, *n*: *ban*. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Dónde van? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Gentil cuidado! | 340 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Que se van, no me decías? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Letras son; ¡míralas bien! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Ya miro. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | *B*, *e*, *n*: *ben*. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Adónde? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Adonde en mis días |  | | no te vuelva más a ver! | 345 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿*Ven*, no dices? Pues ya voy. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Perdiendo el jüicio estoy! |  | | ¡Es imposible aprender! |  | | ¡Vive Dios, que te he de dar |  | | una palmeta! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Tú a mí? | 350 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  | | --- | | ¡Muestra la mano! | | *(Saca una palmatoria)* | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hela aquí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Aprende a deletrear! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Ay, perro! ¿Aquesto es palmeta? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  | | --- | | Pues, ¿qué pensabas? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Aguarda!... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | ¡Ella le mata! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya tarda | 355 | | tu favor, Nise discreta. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  | | --- | | ¡Ay, que me mata! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué es esto? |  | | ¿A tu maestro? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hame dado |  | | causa. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | ¿Cómo? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hame engañado. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  | | --- | | ¿Yo engañado? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Dila presto! | 360 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Estaba aprendiendo aquí |  | | la letra *bestia* y la *ca*... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | La primera sabes ya. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Es verdad: ya la aprendí. |  | | Sacó un zoquete de palo | 365 | | y al cabo una media bola; |  | | pidióme la mano sola |  | | (¡mira qué lindo regalo!), |  | | y apenas me la tomó, |  | | cuando, ¡zas!, la bola asienta, | 370 | | que pica como pimienta, |  | | y la mano me quebró. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Cuando el discípulo ignora, |  | | tiene el maestro licencia |  | | de castigar. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Linda ciencia! | 375 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | RUFINO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aunque me diese, señora, |  | | vuestro padre cuanto tiene, |  | | no he de darle otra lición. |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **VII** | |
|  | |
| *NISE, FINEA, CELIA* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  | | --- | | ¡Fuese! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No tienes razón: |  | | sufrir y aprender conviene. | 380 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿las letras que allí están, |  | | yo no las aprendo bien? |  | | Vengo cuando dice *ven*, |  | | y voy cuando dice *van*. |  | | ¿Qué quiere, Nise, el maestro, | 385 | | quebrándome la cabeza |  | | con *ban*, *bin*, *bon*? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | ¡Ella es pieza |  | | de rey! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Quiere el padre nuestro |  | | que aprendamos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya yo sé |  | | el Padrenuestro. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No digo | 390 | | sino el nuestro; y el castigo, |  | | por darte memoria fue. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Póngame un hilo en el dedo |  | | y no aquel palo en la palma. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Mas que se te sale el alma? | 395 | | Si lo sabe... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Muerta quedo! |  | | ¡Oh, Celia! No se lo digas, |  | | y verás qué te daré. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **VIII** | |
|  | |
| *CLARA, criada* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  | | --- | | *[A Finea]* | | ¡Topé contigo, a la fe! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya, Celia, las dos amigas | 400 | | se han juntado. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | A nadie quiere |  | | más, en todas las criadas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Dame albricias, tan bien dadas |  | | como el suceso requiere! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Pues, ¿de qué son? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya parió | 405 | | nuestra gata la romana. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Cierto, cierto? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Esta mañana. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Parió en el tejado? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Pues, ¿dónde? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | En el aposento; |  | | que cierto se echó de ver | 410 | | su entendimiento. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Es mujer |  | | notable. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Escucha un momento. |  | | Salía, por donde suele, |  | | el Sol, muy galán y rico, |  | | con la librea del rey, | 415 | | colorado y amarillo; |  | | andaban los carretones |  | | quitándole el romadizo |  | | que da la noche a Madrid, |  | | aunque no sé quién me dijo | 420 | | que era la calle Mayor |  | | el soldado más antiguo, |  | | pues nunca el mayor de Flandes |  | | presentó tantos servicios; |  | | pregonaban aguardiente, | 425 | | agua biznieta del vino, |  | | los hombres Carnestolendas, |  | | todos naranjas y gritos. |  | | Dormían las rentas grandes, |  | | despertaban los oficios, | 430 | | tocaban los boticarios |  | | sus almireces a pino, |  | | cuando la gata de casa |  | | comenzó, con mil suspiros, |  | | a decir: «¡Ay, ay, ay, ay! | 435 | | ¡Que quiero parir, marido!». |  | | Levantóse Hociquimocho, |  | | y fue corriendo a decirlo |  | | a sus parientes y deudos; |  | | que deben de ser moriscos, | 440 | | porque el lenguaje que hablaban, |  | | en tiple de monacillos, |  | | si no es jerigonza entre ellos, |  | | no es español, ni latino. |  | | Vino una gata viuda, | 445 | | con blanco y negro vestido |  | | -sospecho que era su agüela-, |  | | gorda y compuesta de hocico; |  | | y, si lo que arrastra, honra, |  | | como dicen los antiguos, | 450 | | tan honrada es por la cola |  | | como otros por sus oficios. |  | | Trújole cierta manteca, |  | | desayunóse y previno |  | | en qué recebir el parto. | 455 | | Hubo temerarios gritos: |  | | no es burla; parió seis gatos |  | | tan remendados y lindos, |  | | que pudieran, a ser pías, |  | | llevar el coche más rico. | 460 | | Regocijados bajaron |  | | de los tejados vecinos, |  | | caballetes y terrados, |  | | todos los deudos y amigos: |  | | Lamicola, Arañizaldo, | 465 | | Marfuz, Marramao, Micilo, |  | | Tumbahollín, Mico, Miturrio, |  | | Rabicorto, Zapaquildo; |  | | unos vestidos de pardo, |  | | otros de blanco vestidos, | 470 | | y otros con forros de martas, |  | | en cueras y capotillos. |  | | De negro vino a la fiesta |  | | el gallardo Golosino, |  | | luto que mostraba entonces | 475 | | de su padre el gaticidio. |  | | Cuál la morcilla presenta, |  | | cuál el pez, cuál el cabrito, |  | | cuál el gorrión astuto, |  | | cuál el simple palomino. | 480 | | Trazando quedan agora, |  | | para mejor regocijo |  | | en el gatesco senado |  | | correr gansos cinco a cinco. |  | | Ven presto, que si los oyes, | 485 | | dirás que parecen niños, |  | | y darás a la parida |  | | el parabién de los hijos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡No me pudieras contar |  | | caso, para el gusto mío, | 490 | | de mayor contentamiento! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  | | --- | | Camina. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tras ti camino. |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **IX** | |
|  | |
| *NISE, CELIA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Hay locura semejante? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Y Clara es boba también? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Por eso la quiere bien. | 495 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | La semejanza es bastante; |  | | aunque yo pienso que Clara |  | | es más bellaca que boba. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Con esto la engaña y roba. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **X** | |
|  | |
| *DUARDO, FENISO, LAURENCIO, caballeros* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aquí, como estrella clara, | 500 | | a su hermosura nos guía. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y aun es del sol su luz pura. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Oh, reina de la hermosura! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  | | --- | | ¡Oh, Nise! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Oh, señora mía! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | Caballeros... | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Esta vez, | 505 | | por vuestro ingenio gallardo, |  | | de un soneto de Duardo |  | | os hemos de hacer jüez. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿A mí, que soy de Finea |  | | hermana y sangre? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | A vos sola, | 510 | | que sois sibila española, |  | | no Cumana ni Eritrea; |  | | a vos, por quien ya las Gracias |  | | son cuatro, y las Musas diez, |  | | es justo haceros juez. | 515 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si ignorancias, si desgracias |  | | trujérades a juzgar, |  | | era justa la elección. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Vuestra rara discreción, |  | | imposible de alabar, | 520 | | fue justamente elegida. |  | | Oíd, señora, a Eduardo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Vaya el soneto! Ya aguardo, |  | | aunque, de indigna, corrida. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | La calidad elementar resiste | 525 | | mi amor, que a la virtud celeste aspira, |  | | y en las mentes angélicas se mira, |  | | donde la idea del calor consiste. |  | | No ya como elemento el fuego viste |  | | el alma, cuyo vuelo al sol admira; | 530 | | que de inferiores mundos se retira, |  | | adonde el serafín ardiendo asiste. |  | | No puede elementar fuego abrasarme. |  | | La virtud celestial que vivifica, |  | | envidia el verme a la suprema alzarme; | 535 | | que donde el fuego angélico me aplica, |  | | ¿cómo podrá mortal poder tocarme, |  | | que eterno y fin contradición implica? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ni una palabra entendí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues en parte se leyera | 540 | | que más de alguno dijera |  | | por arrogancia: «Yo sí.» |  | | La intención, o el argumento, |  | | es pintar a quien ya llega |  | | libre del amor, que ciega | 545 | | con luz del entendimiento, |  | | a la alta contemplación |  | | de aquel puro amor sin fin, |  | | donde es fuego el serafín. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Argumento y intención | 550 | | queda entendido. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Profundos |  | | conceptos! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Mucho le esconden! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tres fuegos, que corresponden, |  | | hermosa Nise, a tres mundos, |  | | dan fundamento a los otros. | 555 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Bien los podéis declarar! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Calidad elementar |  | | es el calor en nosotros; |  | | la celestial, es virtud |  | | que calienta y que recrea, | 560 | | y la angélica es la idea |  | | del calor. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Con inquietud |  | | escucho lo que no entiendo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | El elemento en nosotros |  | | es fuego. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Entendéis vosotros? | 565 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | El puro sol que estáis viendo |  | | en el cielo, fuego es, |  | | y fuego el entendimiento |  | | seráfico; pero siento |  | | que así difieren los tres: | 570 | | que el que elementar se llama, |  | | abrasa cuando se aplica; |  | | el celeste vivifica, |  | | y el sobreceleste ama. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No discurras, por tu vida; | 575 | | vete a escuelas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Donde estás, |  | | lo son. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo no escucho más, |  | | de no entenderte corrida. |  | | ¡Escribe fácil! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Platón, |  | | a lo que en cosas divinas | 580 | | escribió, puso cortinas |  | | que, tales como estas, son |  | | matemáticas figuras |  | | y enigmas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Oye, Laurencio! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  | | --- | | *[A Duardo]* | | Ella os ha puesto silencio. | 585 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Temió las cosas escuras. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  | | --- | | ¡Es mujer! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | La claridad |  | | a todos es agradable, |  | | que se escriba o que se hable. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | ¿Cómo va de voluntad? | 590 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Como quien la tiene en ti. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo te la pago muy bien. |  | | No traigas contigo quien |  | | me eclipse el hablarte ansí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo, señora, no me atrevo, | 595 | | por mi humildad, a tus ojos; |  | | que, dando en viles despojos, |  | | se afrenta el rayo de Febo; |  | | pero, si quieres pasar |  | | al alma, hallarásla rica | 600 | | de la fe que amor publica. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Un papel te quiero dar; |  | | pero, ¿cómo podrá ser |  | | que destos visto no sea? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si en lo que el alma desea | 605 | | me quieres favorecer, |  | | mano y papel podré aquí |  | | asir juntos, atrevido, |  | | como finjas que has caído. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | ¡Jesús! | | *[Hace Nise como que cae]* | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Qué es eso? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Caí! | 610 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Con las obras respondiste. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Esas responden mejor, |  | | que no hay sin obras amor. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Amor en obras consiste. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Laurencio mío, adiós queda. | 615 | | Duardo y Feniso, adiós. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que tanta ventura a vos |  | | como hermosura os conceda. |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XI** | |
|  | |
| *DUARDO, LAURENCIO, FENISO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  | | --- | | *[A Laurencio]* | | ¿Qué os ha dicho del soneto |  | | Nise? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que es muy extremado. | 620 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Habréis los dos murmurado, |  | | que hacéis versos, en efeto. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya no es menester hacellos |  | | para saber murmurallos; |  | | que se atreve a censurallos | 625 | | quien no se atreve a entendellos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Los dos tenemos que hacer. |  | | Licencia nos podéis dar. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Las leyes de no estorbar |  | | queremos obedecer. | 630 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¡Malicia es esa! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡No es tal! |  | | La divina Nise es vuestra, |  | | o, por lo menos, lo muestra. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pudiera, a tener igual. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XII** | |
|  | |
| *Despídanse, y quede solo LAURENCIO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hermoso sois, sin duda, pensamiento, | 635 | | y, aunque honesto también, con ser hermoso, |  | | si es calidad del bien ser provechoso, |  | | una parte de tres que os falta siento. |  | | Nise, con un divino entendimiento, |  | | os enriquece de un amor dichoso; | 640 | | mas sois de dueño pobre, y es forzoso |  | | que en la necesidad falte el contento. |  | | Si el oro es blanco y centro del descanso, |  | | y el descanso del gusto, yo os prometo |  | | que tarda el navegar con viento manso. | 645 | | Pensamiento, mudemos de sujeto; |  | | si voy necio tras vos, y en ir me canso, |  | | cuando vengáis tras mí, seréis discreto. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XIII** | |
|  | |
| *Entre PEDRO, lacayo de LAURENCIO, con LAURENCIO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Qué necio andaba en buscarte |  | | fuera de aqueste lugar! | 650 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Bien me pudieras hallar |  | | con el alma en otra parte. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Luego, ¿estás sin ella aquí? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ha podido un pensamiento |  | | reducir su movimiento | 655 | | desde mí, fuera de mí. |  | | ¿No has visto que la saeta |  | | del reloj en un lugar |  | | firme siempre suele estar |  | | aunque nunca está quïeta, | 660 | | y tal vez está en la una, |  | | y luego en las dos está? |  | | Pues, así mi alma ya, |  | | sin hacer mudanza alguna |  | | de la casa en que me ves, | 665 | | desde Nise que ha querido, |  | | a las doce se ha subido, |  | | que es número de interés. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿cómo es esa mudanza? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Como la saeta soy, | 670 | | que desde la una voy |  | | por lo que el círculo alcanza. |  | | ¿Señalaba a Nise? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues ya señalo en Finea. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Eso quieres que te crea? | 675 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Por qué no, si hay causa? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Di. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Nise es una sola hermosa, |  | | Finea las doce son: |  | | hora de más bendición, |  | | más descansada y copiosa. | 680 | | En las doce el oficial |  | | descansa, y bástale ser |  | | hora entonces de comer, |  | | tan precisa y natural. |  | | Quiero decir que Finea | 685 | | hora de sustento es, |  | | cuyo descanso ya ves |  | | cuánto el hombre le desea. |  | | Denme, pues, las doce a mí, |  | | que soy pobre, con mujer | 690 | | que, dándome de comer, |  | | es la mejor para mí. |  | | Nise es ahora infortunada, |  | | donde mi planeta airado, |  | | de sextil y de cuadrado | 695 | | me mira con frente armada. |  | | Finea es ahora dichosa, |  | | donde Júpiter benigno |  | | me está mirando de trino, |  | | con aspecto y faz hermosa. | 700 | | Doyme a entender que, poniendo |  | | en Finea mis cuidados, |  | | a cuarenta mil ducados |  | | las manos voy previniendo. |  | | Esta, Pedro, desde hoy | 705 | | ha de ser empresa mía. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Para probar tu osadía, |  | | en una sospecha estoy. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Cuál? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que te has de arrepentir |  | | por ser simple esta mujer. | 710 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Quién has visto de comer, |  | | de descansar y vestir |  | | arrepentido jamás? |  | | Pues esto viene con ella. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | A Nise, discreta y bella, | 715 | | Laurencio, ¿dejar podrás |  | | por una boba ignorante? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Qué ignorante majadero! |  | | ¿No ves que el sol del dinero |  | | va del ingenio adelante? | 720 | | El que es pobre, ése es tenido |  | | por simple; el rico, por sabio. |  | | No hay en el nacer agravio, |  | | por notable que haya sido, |  | | que el dinero no lo encubra; | 725 | | ni hay falta en naturaleza |  | | que con la mucha pobreza |  | | no se aumente y se descubra. |  | | Desde hoy quiero enamorar |  | | a Finea. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | He sospechado | 730 | | que a un ingenio tan cerrado |  | | no hay puerta por donde entrar. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | Yo sé cuál. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Yo no, por Dios! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Clara, su boba criada. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sospecho que es más taimada | 735 | | que boba. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Demos los dos |  | | en enamorarlas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Creo |  | | que Clara será tercera |  | | más fácil. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De esa manera, |  | | seguro va mi deseo. | 740 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ellas vienen; disimula. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si puede ser en mi mano. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Que ha de poder un cristiano |  | | enamorar una mula! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Linda cara y talle tiene. | 745 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  | | --- | | ¡Así fuera el alma! | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XIV** | |
|  | |
| *FINEA y CLARA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Agora |  | | conozco, hermosa señora, |  | | que no solamente viene |  | | el sol de las orientales |  | | partes, pues de vuestros ojos | 750 | | sale con rayos más rojos |  | | y luces piramidales; |  | | pero si, cuando salís |  | | tan grande fuerza traéis, |  | | al mediodía, ¿qué haréis? | 755 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Comer, como vos decís, |  | | no pirámides ni peros, |  | | sino cosas provechosas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Esas estrellas hermosas, |  | | esos nocturnos luceros | 760 | | me tienen fuera de mí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si vos andáis con estrellas, |  | | ¿qué mucho que os traigan ellas |  | | arromadizado ansí? |  | | Acostaos siempre temprano, | 765 | | y dormid con tocador. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿No entendéis que os tengo amor |  | | puro, honesto, limpio y llano? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Qué es amor? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Amor? Deseo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿De qué? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De una cosa hermosa. | 770 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Es oro? ¿Es diamante? ¿Es cosa |  | | destas que muy lindas veo? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No; sino de la hermosura |  | | de una mujer como vos, |  | | que, como lo ordena Dios, | 775 | | para buen fin se procura; |  | | y esta, que vos la tenéis, |  | | engendra deseo en mí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y yo, ¿qué he de hacer aquí, |  | | si sé que vos me queréis? | 780 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Quererme. ¿No habéis oído |  | | que amor con amor se paga? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No sé yo cómo se haga, |  | | porque nunca yo he querido, |  | | ni en la cartilla lo vi, | 785 | | ni me lo enseñó mi madre. |  | | Preguntarélo a mi padre... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Esperaos, que no es ansí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Pues, ¿cómo? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Destos mis ojos |  | | saldrán unos rayos vivos, | 790 | | como espíritus visivos, |  | | de sangre y de fuego rojos, |  | | que se entrarán por los vuestros. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No, señor; arriedro vaya |  | | cosa en que espíritus haya. | 795 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Son los espíritus nuestros, |  | | que juntos se han de encender |  | | y causar un dulce fuego |  | | con que se pierde el sosiego, |  | | hasta que se viene a ver | 800 | | el alma en la posesión, |  | | que es el fin del casamiento; |  | | que con este santo intento |  | | justos los amores son, |  | | porque el alma que yo tengo | 805 | | a vuestro pecho se pasa. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Tanto pasa quien se casa? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  | | --- | | *[A Clara]* | | Con él, como os digo, vengo |  | | tan muerto por vuestro amor, |  | | que aquesta ocasión busqué. | 810 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué es amor, que no lo sé? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Amor? ¡Locura, furor! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿loca tengo de estar? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Es una dulce locura, |  | | por quien la mayor cordura | 815 | | suelen los hombres trocar. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo, lo que mi ama hiciere, |  | | eso haré. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ciencia es amor, |  | | que el más rudo labrador |  | | a pocos cursos la adquiere. | 820 | | En comenzando a querer, |  | | enferma la voluntad |  | | de una dulce enfermedad. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No me la mandes tener; |  | | que no he tenido en mi vida | 825 | | sino solos sabañones. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Agrádanme las liciones! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tú verás, de mí querida, |  | | cómo has de quererme aquí; |  | | que es luz del entendimiento | 830 | | amor. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Lo del casamiento |  | | me cuadra. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y me importa a mí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿llevaráme a su casa |  | | y tendráme allá también? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | Sí, señora. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y, ¿eso es bien? | 835 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y muy justo en quien se casa. |  | | Vuestro padre y vuestra madre |  | | casados fueron ansí: |  | | desonacistes. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Yo? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Cuando se casó mi padre, | 840 | | ¿no estaba yo allí tampoco? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | ¿Hay semejante ignorancia? |  | | Sospecho que esta ganancia |  | | camina a volverme loco. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Mi padre pienso que viene. | 845 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues voyme. Acordaos de mí. |  | | | |
|  | |
| *Vase* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¡Que me place! | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  | | --- | | ¿Fuese? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sí, |  | | y seguirle me conviene. |  | | Tenedme en vuestra memoria. |  | | | |
|  | |
| *Vase* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  | | --- | | Si os vais, ¿cómo? | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XV** | |
|  | |
| *CLARA, FINEA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Has visto, Clara, | 850 | | lo que es amor? ¡Quién pensara |  | | tal cosa! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No hay pepitoria |  | | que tenga más menudencias |  | | de manos, tripas y pies. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Mi padre, como lo ves, | 855 | | anda en mil impertinencias. |  | | Tratado me ha de casar |  | | con un caballero indiano, |  | | sevillano o toledano. |  | | Dos veces me vino a hablar, | 860 | | y esta postrera sacó |  | | de una carta un naipecito |  | | muy repulido y bonito, |  | | y luego que le miró |  | | me dijo: «Toma, Finea, | 865 | | ese es tu marido». Y fuese. |  | | Yo, como, en fin, no supiese |  | | esto de casar qué sea, |  | | tomé el negro del marido, |  | | que no tiene más de cara, | 870 | | cuera y ropilla; mas, Clara, |  | | ¿qué importa que sea pulido |  | | este marido o quien es, |  | | si todo el cuerpo no pasa |  | | de la pretina? Que en casa | 875 | | ninguno sin piernas ves. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Pardiez, que tienes razón! |  | | ¿Tiénesle ahí? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Vesle aquí. |  | | *(Saca un retrato)* |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  | | --- | | ¡Buena cara y cuerpo! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sí; |  | | mas no pasa del jubón. | 880 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Luego este no podrá andar. |  | | ¡Ay, los ojitos que tiene! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Señor, con Nise... | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Si viene |  | | a casarte...? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No hay casar; |  | | que este que se va de aquí | 885 | | tiene piernas, tiene traza. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y más, que con perro caza; |  | | que el mozo me muerde a mí. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XVI** | |
|  | |
| *Entre OTAVIO con NISE* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Por la calle de Toledo |  | | dicen que entró por la posta. | 890 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿cómo no llega ya? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Algo, por dicha, acomoda. |  | | Temblando estoy de Finea. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aquí está, señor, la novia. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | Hija, ¿no sabes? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No sabe; | 895 | | que esa es su desdicha toda. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya está en Madrid tu marido. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Siempre tu memoria es poca. |  | | ¿No me lo diste en un naipe? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Esa es la figura sola, | 900 | | que estaba en él retratado; |  | | que lo vivo viene agora. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XVII** | |
|  | |
| *Entre CELIA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aquí está el señor Liseo, |  | | apeado de unas postas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Mira, Finea, que estés | 905 | | muy prudente y muy señora. |  | | Llegad sillas y almohadas. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XVIII** | |
|  | |
| *LISEO, TURÍN y criados* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Esta licencia se toma |  | | quien viene a ser hijo vuestro. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y quien viene a darnos honra. | 910 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Agora, señor, decidme: |  | | ¿Quién es de las dos mi esposa? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¡Yo! ¿No lo ve? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Bien merezco |  | | los brazos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Luego, ¿no importa? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Bien le puedes abrazar. | 915 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¡Clara...! | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  | | --- | | ¡Señora...! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Aún agora |  | | viene con piernas y pies! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Esto, ¿es burla o jerigonza? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | El verle de medio arriba |  | | me daba mayor congoja. | 920 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Abrazad vuestra cuñada. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No fue la fama engañosa, |  | | que hablaba en vuestra hermosura. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Soy muy vuestra servidora. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Lo que es el entendimiento! | 925 | | A toda España alborota. |  | | La divina Nise os llaman; |  | | sois discreta como hermosa, |  | | y hermosa con mucho extremo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿cómo requiebra a esotra, | 930 | | si viene a ser mi marido? |  | | ¿No es más necio? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Calla, loca! |  | | Sentaos, hijos, por mi vida. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¡Turín...! | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  | | --- | | ¿Señor? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | ¡Linda tonta! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Cómo venís del camino? | 935 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Con los deseos enoja; |  | | que siempre le hacen más largo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ese macho de la noria |  | | pudiérais haber pedido, |  | | que anda como una persona. | 940 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | Calla, hermana. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Callad vos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aunque hermosa y virtuosa, |  | | es Finea de este humor. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Turín, ¿trajiste las joyas? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No ha llegado nuestra gente. | 945 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Qué de olvidos se perdonan |  | | en un camino a criados! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Joyas traéis? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Y le sobra |  | | de las joyas el principio, |  | | tanto el jo se le acomoda. | 950 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Calor traéis. ¿Queréis algo? |  | | ¿Qué os aflige? ¿Qué os congoja? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Agua quisiera pedir. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Haráos mal el agua sola. |  | | Traigan una caja. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | A fe | 955 | | que si, como viene agora, |  | | fuera el sábado pasado, |  | | que hicimos yo y esa moza |  | | un menudo... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Calla, necia! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ...mucha especia, ¡linda cosa! | 960 | | | |
|  | |
| *Entren con agua, toalla, salva y una caja* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  | | --- | | El agua está aquí. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Comed. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | El verla, señor, provoca; |  | | porque con su risa dice |  | | que la beba y que no coma |  | | *(Beba)* |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Él bebe como una mula. | 965 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | ¡Buen requiebro! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Qué enfadosa |  | | que estás hoy! ¡Calla, si quieres! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Aun no habéis dejado gota! |  | | Esperad; os limpiaré. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | Pues, ¿tú le limpias? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué importa? | 970 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | ¡Media barba me ha quitado! |  | | ¡Lindamente me enamora! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que descanséis es razón. |  | | *[Aparte]* |  | | Quiero, pues no se reporta, |  | | llevarle de aquí a Finea. | 975 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Tarde el descanso se cobra, |  | | que en tal desdicha se pierde. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ahora bien; entrad vosotras, |  | | y aderezad su aposento. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Mi cama pienso que sobra | 980 | | para los dos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Tú no ves |  | | que no están hechas las bodas? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Pues, ¿qué importa? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ven conmigo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Allá dentro? | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | Sí. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Adiós. ¡Hola! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Las del mar de mi desdicha | 985 | | me anegan entre sus ondas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo también, hijo, me voy, |  | | para prevenir las cosas, |  | | que, para que os desposéis |  | | con más aplauso, me tocan. | 990 | | Dios os guarde. |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |
| --- |
| **XIX** |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No sé yo |  | | de qué manera disponga |  | | mi desventura. ¡Ay de mí! |  | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Quieres quitarte las botas? |  | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No, Turín; sino la vida. | 995 | | ¿Hay boba tan espantosa? |  | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Lástima me ha dado a mí, |  | | considerando que ponga |  | | en un cuerpo tan hermoso |  | | el cielo un alma tan loca. | 1000 | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aunque estuviera casado |  | | por poder, en causa propia |  | | me pudiera descasar. |  | | La ley es llana y notoria; |  | | pues concertando mujer | 1005 | | con sentido, me desposan |  | | con una bestia del campo, |  | | con una villana tosca. |  | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Luego, ¿no te casarás? |  | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Mal haya la hacienda toda | 1010 | | que con tal pensión se adquiere, |  | | que con tal censo se toma! |  | | Demás que aquesta mujer, |  | | si bien es hermosa y moza, |  | | ¿qué puede parir de mí | 1015 | | sino tigres, leones y onzas? |  | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Eso es engaño, que vemos |  | | por experiencias y historias, |  | | mil hijos de padres sabios, |  | | que de necios los deshonran. | 1020 | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Verdad es que Cicerón |  | | tuvo a Marco Tulio en Roma, |  | | que era un caballo, un camello. |  | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De la misma suerte consta |  | | que de necios padres suele | 1025 | | salir una fénix sola. |  | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Turín, por lo general, |  | | y es consecuencia forzosa, |  | | lo semejante se engendra. |  | | Hoy la palabra se rompa; | 1030 | | rásguense cartas y firmas; |  | | que ningún tesoro compra |  | | la libertad. Aun si fuera |  | | Nise... |  | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Oh, qué bien te reportas! |  | | Dicen que si a un hombre airado, | 1035 | | que colérico se arroja, |  | | le pusiesen un espejo, |  | | en mirando en él la sombra |  | | que representa su cara, |  | | se tiempla y desapasiona; | 1040 | | así tú, como tu gusto |  | | miraste en su hermana hermosa |  | | -que el gusto es cara del alma, |  | | pues su libertad se nombra-, |  | | luego templaste la tuya. | 1045 | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Bien dices, porque ella sola |  | | el enojo de su padre, |  | | que, como ves, me alborota, |  | | me puede quitar, Turín. |  | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Que no hay que tratar de esotra? | 1050 | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿he de dejar la vida |  | | por la muerte temerosa, |  | | y por la noche enlutada |  | | el sol que los cielos dora, |  | | por los áspides las aves, | 1055 | | por las espinas las rosas, |  | | y por un demonio un ángel? |  | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Digo que razón te sobra: |  | | que no está el gusto en el oro; |  | | que son el oro y las horas | 1060 | | muy diversas. |  | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Desde aquí |  | | renuncio la dama boba. |  | | |

**Acto II**

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **I** | |
|  | |
| *Sala que da a un parque, en casa de OTAVIO* |  |
|  | |
| *DUARDO, LAURENCIO, FENISO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | En fin, ha pasado un mes |  | | y no se casa Liseo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No siempre mueve el deseo |  | | el codicioso interés. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De Nise la enfermedad | 5 | | ha sido causa bastante. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ver a Finea ignorante |  | | templará su voluntad. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Menos lo está que solía. |  | | Temo que amor ha de ser | 10 | | artificioso a encender |  | | piedra tan helada y fría. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Tales milagros ha hecho |  | | en gente rústica amor! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No se tendrá por menor | 15 | | dar alma a su rudo pecho. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Amor, señores, ha sido |  | | aquel ingenio profundo, |  | | que llaman alma del mundo, |  | | y es el dotor que ha tenido | 20 | | la cátedra de las ciencias; |  | | porque solo con amor |  | | aprende el hombre mejor |  | | sus divinas diferencias. |  | | Así lo sintió Platón; | 25 | | esto Aristóteles dijo; |  | | que, como del cielo es hijo, |  | | es todo contemplación. |  | | De ella nació el admirarse, |  | | y de admirarse nació | 30 | | el filosofar, que dio |  | | luz con que pudo fundarse |  | | toda ciencia artificial. |  | | Y a amor se ha de agradecer |  | | que el deseo de saber | 35 | | es al hombre natural. |  | | Amor con fuerza suave |  | | dio al hombre el saber sentir, |  | | dio leyes para vivir |  | | político, honesto y grave. | 40 | | Amor repúblicas hizo; |  | | que la concordia nació |  | | de amor, con que a ser volvió |  | | lo que la guerra deshizo. |  | | Amor dio lengua a las aves, | 45 | | vistió la tierra de frutos, |  | | y, como prados enjutos, |  | | rompió el mar con fuertes naves. |  | | Amor enseñó a escribir |  | | altos y dulces concetos, | 50 | | como de su causa efetos. |  | | Amor enseñó a vestir |  | | al más rudo, al más grosero; |  | | de la elegancia fue amor |  | | el maestro; el inventor | 55 | | fue de los versos primero; |  | | la música se le debe |  | | y la pintura. Pues, ¿quién |  | | dejará de saber bien, |  | | como sus efetos pruebe? | 60 | | No dudo de que a Finea, |  | | como ella comience a amar, |  | | la deje amor de enseñar, |  | | por imposible que sea. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Está bien pensado ansí, | 65 | | y su padre lleva intento, |  | | por dicha, en el casamiento, |  | | que ame y sepa. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y yo de aquí, |  | | infamando amores locos, |  | | en limpio vengo a sacar | 70 | | que pocos deben de amar |  | | en lugar que saben pocos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  | | --- | | ¡Linda malicia! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Extremada! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Difícil cosa es saber! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sí; pero fácil creer | 75 | | que sabe, el que poco o nada. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Qué divino entendimiento |  | | tiene Nise! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Celestial! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Cómo, siendo necio el mal, |  | | ha tenido atrevimiento | 80 | | para hacerle estos agravios, |  | | de tal ingenio desprecios? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Porque de sufrir a necios |  | | suelen enfermar los sabios. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  | | --- | | Ella viene. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y con razón | 85 | | se alegra cuanto la mira. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **II** | |
|  | |
| *NISE, CELIA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte a Celia]* | | Mucho la historia me admira. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Amores pienso que son, |  | | fundados en el dinero. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Nunca fundó su valor | 90 | | sobre dineros amor, |  | | que busca el alma primero. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Señora, a vuestra salud, |  | | hoy cuantas cosas os ven |  | | dan alegre parabién | 95 | | y tienen vida y quietud; |  | | que como vuestra virtud |  | | era el sol que se la dio, |  | | mientras el mal le eclipsó |  | | también lo estuvieron ellas; | 100 | | que hasta ver vuestras estrellas |  | | fortuna el tiempo corrió. |  | | Mas como la primavera |  | | sale con pies de marfil, |  | | y el vario velo sutil | 105 | | tiende en la verde ribera, |  | | corre el agua lisonjera |  | | y están riñendo las flores |  | | sobre tomar las colores, |  | | así vos salís, trocando | 110 | | el triste tiempo y sembrando |  | | en campos de almas amores. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya se ríen estas fuentes, |  | | y son perlas las que fueron |  | | lágrimas, con que sintieron | 115 | | esas estrellas ausentes; |  | | y a las aves sus corrientes |  | | hacen instrumentos claros |  | | con que quieren celebraros. |  | | Todo se anticipa a veros, | 120 | | y todo intenta ofreceros |  | | con lo que puede alegraros. |  | | Pues si con veros hacéis |  | | tales efetos agora, |  | | donde no hay alma, señora, | 125 | | más de la que vos ponéis, |  | | en mí, ¿qué muestras haréis, |  | | qué señales de alegría, |  | | este venturoso día, |  | | después de tantos enojos, | 130 | | siendo vos sol de mis ojos, |  | | siendo vos alma en la mía? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | A estar sin vida llegué |  | | el tiempo que no os serví; |  | | que fue lo más que sentí, | 135 | | aunque sin mi culpa fue. |  | | Yo vuestros males pasé, |  | | como cuerpo que animáis; |  | | vos movimiento me dais, |  | | yo soy instrumento vuestro, | 140 | | que en mi vida y salud muestro |  | | todo lo que vos pasáis. |  | | Parabién me den a mí |  | | de la salud que hay en vos, |  | | pues que pasamos los dos | 145 | | el mismo mal en que os vi. |  | | Solamente os ofendí, |  | | aunque la disculpa os muestro, |  | | en que este mal que fue nuestro, |  | | solo tenerle debía, | 150 | | no vos, que sois alma mía, |  | | yo sí, que soy cuerpo vuestro. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pienso que de oposición |  | | me dais los tres parabién. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y es bien, pues lo sois por quien | 155 | | viven los que vuestros son. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Divertíos, por mi vida, |  | | cortándome algunas flores |  | | los dos, pues con sus colores |  | | la diferencia os convida | 160 | | de este jardín, porque quiero |  | | hablar a Laurencio un poco. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Quien ama y sufre, o es loco |  | | o necio. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tal premio espero. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No son vanos mis recelos. | 165 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  | | --- | | Ella le quiere. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo haré |  | | un ramillete de fe, |  | | pero sembrado de celos. |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **III** | |
|  | |
| *LAURENCIO, NISE* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya se han ido. ¿Podré yo, |  | | Nise, con mis brazos darte | 170 | | parabién de tu salud? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Desvía, fingido, fácil, |  | | lisonjero, engañador, |  | | loco, inconstante, mudable |  | | hombre, que en un mes de ausencia | 175 | | -que bien merece llamarse |  | | ausencia la enfermedad-, |  | | el pensamiento mudaste! |  | | Pero mal dije en un mes, |  | | porque puedes disculparte | 180 | | con que creíste mi muerte, |  | | y, si mi muerte pensaste, |  | | con gracioso sentimiento, |  | | pagaste el amor que sabes, |  | | mudando el tuyo en Finea. | 185 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Qué dices? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pero bien haces: |  | | tú eres pobre, tú discreto, |  | | ella rica y ignorante; |  | | buscaste lo que no tienes, |  | | y lo que tienes dejaste. | 190 | | Discreción tienes, y en mí |  | | la que celebrabas antes |  | | dejas con mucha razón; |  | | que dos ingenios iguales |  | | no conocen superior; | 195 | | y, por dicha, ¿imaginaste |  | | que quisiera yo el imperio |  | | que a los hombres debe darse? |  | | El oro que no tenías, |  | | tenerle solicitaste | 200 | | enamorando a Finea. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | Escucha... | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué he de escucharte? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Quién te ha dicho que yo he sido |  | | en un mes tan inconstante? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Parécete poco un mes? | 205 | | Yo te disculpo, no hables; |  | | que la Luna está en el cielo |  | | sin intereses mortales, |  | | y en un mes, y aun algo menos, |  | | está creciente y menguante. | 210 | | Tú en la tierra, y de Madrid, |  | | donde hay tantos vendavales |  | | de intereses en los hombres, |  | | no fue milagro mudarte. |  | | Dile, Celia, lo que has visto. | 215 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya, Laurencio, no te espantes |  | | de que Nise, mi señora, |  | | de esta manera te trate: |  | | yo sé que has dicho a Finea |  | | requiebros... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Que me levantes, | 220 | | Celia, tales testimonios!... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tú sabes que son verdades; |  | | y no solo tú a mi dueño |  | | ingratamente pagaste, |  | | pero tu Pedro, el que tiene | 225 | | de tus secretos las llaves, |  | | ama a Clara tiernamente. |  | | ¿Quieres que más te declare? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tus celos han sido, Celia, |  | | y quieres que yo los pague. | 230 | | ¿Pedro a Clara, aquella boba? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Laurencio, si le enseñaste, |  | | ¿por qué te afrentas de aquello |  | | en que de ciego no caes? |  | | Astrólogo me pareces, | 235 | | que siempre de ajenos males, |  | | sin reparar en los suyos, |  | | largos pronósticos hacen. |  | | ¡Qué bien empleas tu ingenio! |  | | «De Nise confieso el talle, | 240 | | mas no es sólo el exterior |  | | el que obliga a los que saben». |  | | ¡Oh, quién os oyera juntos!... |  | | Debéis de hablar en romances, |  | | porque un discreto y un necio | 245 | | no pueden ser consonantes. |  | | ¡Ay Laurencio, qué buen pago |  | | de fe y amor tan notable! |  | | Bien dicen que a los amigos, |  | | prueba la cama y la cárcel. | 250 | | Yo enfermé de mis tristezas, |  | | y, de no verte ni hablarte, |  | | sangráronme muchas veces. |  | | ¡Bien me alegraste la sangre! |  | | Por regalos tuyos tuve | 255 | | mudanzas, traiciones, fraudes; |  | | pero, pues tan duros fueron, |  | | di que me diste diamantes. |  | | Ahora bien: ¡esto cesó! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¡Oye, aguarda!... | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Que te aguarde? | 260 | | Pretende tu rica boba, |  | | aunque yo haré que se case |  | | más presto que tú lo piensas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¡Señora!... | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **IV** | |
|  | |
| *Entre LISEO, y asga LAURENCIO a NISE* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Esperaba tarde |  | | los desengaños; mas ya | 265 | | no quiere amor que me engañe. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | ¡Suelta! | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¡No quiero! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué es esto? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Dice Laurencio que rasgue |  | | unos versos que me dio |  | | de cierta dama ignorante, | 270 | | y yo digo que no quiero. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tú podrá ser que lo alcances |  | | de Nise; ruégalo tú. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si algo tengo que rogarte, |  | | haz algo por mis memorias | 275 | | y rasga lo que tú sabes. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | ¡Dejadme los dos! | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **V** | |
|  | |
| *LAURENCIO y LISEO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Qué airada! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo me espanto que te trate |  | | con estos rigores Nise. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, Liseo, no te espantes: | 280 | | que es defeto en los discretos |  | | tal vez el no ser afables. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¿Tienes qué hacer? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Poco o nada. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues vámonos esta tarde |  | | por el Prado arriba. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Vamos | 285 | | donde quiera que tú mandes. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Detrás de los Recoletos |  | | quiero hablarte. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si el hablarme |  | | no es con las lenguas que dicen, |  | | sino con lenguas que hacen, | 290 | | aunque me espanto que sea, |  | | dejaré caballo y pajes. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | Bien puedes. | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **VI** | |
|  | |
| *LAURENCIO solo* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo voy tras ti. |  | | ¡Qué celoso y qué arrogante! |  | | Finea es boba, y, sin duda, | 295 | | de haberle contado nace |  | | mis amores y papeles. |  | | Ya para consejo es tarde; |  | | que deudas y desafíos |  | | a que los honrados salen, | 300 | | para trampas se dilatan, |  | | y no es bien que se dilaten. |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **VII** | |
|  | |
| *Un MAESTRO de danzar y FINEA* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  | | --- | | ¿Tan presto se cansa? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sí. |  | | Y no quiero danzar más. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Como no danza a compás, | 305 | | hase enfadado de sí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Por poco diera de hocicos, |  | | saltando! Enfadada vengo. |  | | ¿Soy yo urraca, que andar tengo |  | | por casa, dando salticos? | 310 | | Un paso, otro contrapaso, |  | | floretas, otra floreta... |  | | ¡Qué locura! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | ¡Qué imperfeta |  | | cosa, en un hermoso vaso |  | | poner la Naturaleza | 315 | | licor de un alma tan ruda! |  | | Con que yo salgo de duda |  | | que no es alma la belleza. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Maestro... | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Señora mía?... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Trae mañana un tamboril. | 320 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ese es instrumento vil, |  | | aunque de mucha alegría. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que soy más aficionada |  | | al cascabel os confieso. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Es muy de caballos eso. | 325 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Haced vos lo que me agrada, |  | | que no es mucha rustiqueza |  | | el traellos en los pies. |  | | Harto peor pienso que es |  | | traellos en la cabeza. | 330 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Quiero seguirle el humor. |  | | Yo haré lo que mandáis. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Id danzando cuando os vais. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo os agradezco el favor, |  | | pero llevaré tras mí | 335 | | mucha gente. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Un pastelero, |  | | un sastre y un zapatero, |  | | ¿llevan la gente tras sí? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No; pero tampoco ellos |  | | por la calle haciendo van | 340 | | sus oficios. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿No podrán, |  | | si quieren? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Podrán hacellos; |  | | y yo no quiero danzar. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Pues no entréis aquí. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No haré. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ni quiero andar en un pie, | 345 | | ni dar vueltas ni saltar. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ni yo enseñar las que sueñan |  | | disparates atrevidos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No importa; que los maridos |  | | son los que mejor enseñan. | 350 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Han visto la mentecata? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué es mentecata, villano? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Señora, tened la mano! |  | | Es una dama que trata |  | | con gravedad y rigor | 355 | | a quien la sirve. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Esa es? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Puesto que vuelve después |  | | con más blandura y amor. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Es eso cierto? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Pues no? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo os juro, aunque nunca ingrata, | 360 | | que no hay mayor mentecata |  | | en todo el mundo que yo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MAESTRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | El creer es cortesía; |  | | adiós, que soy muy cortés. |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **VIII** | |
|  | |
| *CLARA y FINEA* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  | | --- | | ¿Danzaste? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Ya no lo ves? | 365 | | Persíguenme todo el día |  | | con leer, con escribir, |  | | con danzar, y todo es nada. |  | | Sólo Laurencio me agrada. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Cómo te podré decir | 370 | | una desgracia notable? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hablando; porque no hay cosa |  | | de decir dificultosa, |  | | a mujer que viva y hable. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Dormir en día de fiesta, | 375 | | ¿es malo? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pienso que no; |  | | aunque si Adán se durmió, |  | | buena costilla le cuesta. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues si nació la mujer |  | | de una dormida costilla, | 380 | | que duerma no es maravilla. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Agora vengo a entender |  | | sólo con esa advertencia, |  | | por qué se andan tras nosotras |  | | los hombres, y en unas y otras | 385 | | hacen tanta diligencia; |  | | que, si aquesto no es asilla, |  | | deben de andar a buscar |  | | su costilla, y no hay parar |  | | hasta topar su costilla. | 390 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Luego si para el que amó |  | | un año, y dos, harto bien, |  | | ¿le dirán los que le ven |  | | que su costilla topó? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | A lo menos los casados. | 395 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  | | --- | | ¡Sabia estás! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aprendo ya; |  | | que me enseña amor quizá |  | | con liciones de cuidados. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Volviendo al cuento, Laurencio |  | | me dio un papel para ti. | 400 | | Púseme a hilar -¡ay de mí, |  | | cuánto provoca el silencio!-. |  | | Metí en el copo el papel, |  | | y como hilaba al candil |  | | y es la estopa tan sutil | 405 | | aprendióse el copo en él. |  | | Cabezas hay disculpadas |  | | cuando duermen sin cojines, |  | | y sueños como rocines |  | | que vienen con cabezadas. | 410 | | Apenas el copo ardió, |  | | cuando, puesta en él de pies, |  | | me chamusqué; ya lo ves. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Y el papel? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Libre quedó, |  | | como el Santo de Pajares. | 415 | | Sobraron estos renglones, |  | | en que hallarás más razones |  | | que en mi cabeza aladares. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Y no se podrán leer? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  | | --- | | Toma, y lee. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo sé poco. | 420 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Dios libre de un fuego loco |  | | la estopa de la mujer! |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **IX** | |
|  | |
| *Entre OTAVIO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo pienso que me canso en enseñarla, |  | | porque es querer labrar con vidro un pórfido; |  | | ni el danzar ni el leer aprender puede, | 425 | | aunque está menos ruda que solía. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Oh padre mentecato y generoso, |  | | bien seas venido! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Cómo mentecato? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aquí el maestro de danzar me dijo |  | | que era yo mentecata, y enojéme; | 430 | | mas él me respondió que este vocablo |  | | significaba una mujer que riñe, |  | | y luego vuelve con amor notable; |  | | y como vienes tú riñendo agora, |  | | y has de mostrarme amor en breve rato, | 435 | | quise también llamarte mentecato. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues hija, no creáis a todas gentes, |  | | ni digáis ese nombre, que no es justo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No lo haré más. Mas diga, señor padre: |  | | ¿sabe leer? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿eso me preguntas? | 440 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tome, ¡por vida suya!, y éste lea. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Este papel? | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Sí, padre. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Oye, Finea: |  | | *(Lea ansí)* |  | | «Agradezco mucho la merced que me has hecho, aunque toda esta noche la he pasado con poco sosiego, pensando en tu hermosura». |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿No hay más? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No hay más; que está muy justamente |  | | quemado lo demás. ¿Quién te le ha dado? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Laurencio, aquel discreto caballero | 445 | | de la academia de mi hermana Nise, |  | | que dice que me quiere con extremo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | De su ignorancia, mi desdicha temo. |  | | Esto trujo a mi casa el ser discreta |  | | Nise: el galán, el músico, el poeta, | 450 | | el lindo, el que se precia de oloroso, |  | | el afeitado, el loco y el ocioso. |  | | ¿Hate pasado más con este, acaso? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ayer, en la escalera, al primer paso, |  | | me dio un abrazo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | ¡En buenos pasos anda | 455 | | mi pobre honor, por una y otra banda! |  | | La discreta, con necios en concetos, |  | | y la boba, en amores con discretos. |  | | A esta no hay llevarla por castigo, |  | | y más que lo podrá entender su esposo. | 460 | | Hija, sabed que estoy muy enojado. |  | | No os dejéis abrazar. ¿Entendéis, hija? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sí, señor padre; y cierto que me pesa, |  | | aunque me pareció muy bien entonces. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Solo vuestro marido ha de ser digno | 465 | | de esos abrazos. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **X** | |
|  | |
| *Entre TURÍN* |  |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | En tu busca vengo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¿De qué es la prisa tanta? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De que al campo |  | | van a matarse mi señor Liseo |  | | y Laurencio, ese hidalgo marquesote, |  | | que desvanece a Nise con sonetos. | 470 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | ¿Qué importa que los padres sean discretos, |  | | si les falta a los hijos la obediencia? |  | | Liseo habrá entendido la imprudencia |  | | deste Laurencio atrevidillo y loco, |  | | y que sirve a su esposa. ¡Caso extraño! | 475 | | ¿Por dónde fueron? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Van, si no me engaño, |  | | hacia los Recoletos Agustinos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues ven tras mí. ¡Qué extraños desatinos! |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XI** | |
|  | |
| *CLARA y FINEA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Parece que se ha enojado |  | | tu padre. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué puedo hacer? | 480 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Por qué le diste a leer |  | | el papel? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya me ha pesado. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya no puedes proseguir |  | | la voluntad de Laurencio. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Clara, no la diferencio | 485 | | con el dejar de vivir. |  | | Yo no entiendo cómo ha sido |  | | desde que el hombre me habló, |  | | porque, si es que siento yo, |  | | él me ha llevado el sentido. | 490 | | Si duermo, sueño con él; |  | | si como, le estoy pensando, |  | | y si bebo, estoy mirando |  | | en agua la imagen dél. |  | | ¿No has visto de qué manera | 495 | | muestra el espejo a quien mira |  | | su rostro, que una mentira |  | | le hace forma verdadera? |  | | Pues lo mismo en vidro miro |  | | que el cristal me representa. | 500 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | A tus palabras atenta, |  | | de tus mudanzas me admiro. |  | | Parece que te transformas |  | | en otra. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | En otro dirás. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Es maestro con quien más | 505 | | para aprender te conformas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Con todo eso, seré |  | | obediente al padre mío; |  | | fuera de que es desvarío |  | | quebrar la palabra y fe. | 510 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  | | --- | | Yo haré lo mismo. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No impidas |  | | el camino que llevabas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿No ves que amé porque amabas, |  | | y olvidaré porque olvidas? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Harto me pesa de amalle; | 515 | | pero a ver mi daño vengo, |  | | aunque sospecho que tengo |  | | de olvidarme de olvidalle. |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XII** | |
|  | |
| *En el campo* |  |
|  | |
| *Entren LISEO y LAURENCIO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Antes, Liseo, de sacar la espada, |  | | quiero saber la causa que os obliga. | 520 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues bien será que la razón os diga. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Liseo, si son celos de Finea, |  | | mientras no sé que vuestra esposa sea, |  | | bien puedo pretender, pues fui primero. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Disimuláis, a fe de caballero, | 525 | | pues tan lejos lleváis el pensamiento |  | | de amar una mujer tan ignorante. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Antes de que la quiera no os espante; |  | | que soy tan pobre como bien nacido, |  | | y quiero sustentarme con el dote. | 530 | | Y que lo diga ansí no os alborote, |  | | pues que vos, dilatando el casamiento, |  | | habéis dado más fuerzas a mi intento, |  | | y porque cuando llegan, obligadas, |  | | a desnudarse en campo las espadas, | 535 | | se han de tratar verdades llanamente; |  | | que es hombre vil quien en el campo miente. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¿Luego, no queréis bien a Nise? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | A Nise |  | | yo no puedo negar que no la quise; |  | | mas su dote serán diez mil ducados, | 540 | | y de cuarenta a diez, ya veis, van treinta, |  | | y pasé de los diez a los cuarenta. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Siendo eso ansí, como de vos lo creo, |  | | estad seguro que jamás Liseo |  | | os quite la esperanza de Finea; | 545 | | que aunque no es la ventura de la fea, |  | | será de la ignorante la ventura; |  | | que así Dios me la dé, que no la quiero, |  | | pues desde que la vi, por Nise muero. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Por Nise? | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¡Sí, por Dios! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues vuestra es Nise, | 550 | | y con la antigüedad que yo la quise, |  | | yo os doy sus esperanzas y favores; |  | | mis deseos os doy y mis amores, |  | | mis ansias, mis serenos, mis desvelos, |  | | mis versos, mis sospechas y mis celos. | 555 | | Entrad con esta runfla y dadle pique; |  | | que no hará mucho en que de vos se pique. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aunque con cartas tripuladas juegue, |  | | aceto la merced, señor Laurencio, |  | | que yo soy rico, y compraré mi gusto. | 560 | | Nise es discreta, yo no quiero el oro; |  | | hacienda tengo, su belleza adoro. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hacéis muy bien; que yo, que soy tan pobre, |  | | el oro solicito que me sobre; |  | | que aunque de entendimiento lo es Finea, | 565 | | yo quiero que en mi casa alhaja sea. |  | | ¿No están las escrituras de una renta |  | | en un cajón de un escritorio, y rinden |  | | aquello que se come todo el año? |  | | ¿No está una casa principal tan firme | 570 | | como de piedra, al fin yeso y ladrillo, |  | | y renta mil ducados a su dueño? |  | | Pues yo haré cuenta que es Finea una casa, |  | | una escritura, un censo y una viña, |  | | y seráme una renta con basquiña; | 575 | | demás que, si me quiere, a mí me basta; |  | | que no hay mayor ingenio que ser casta. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo os doy palabra de ayudaros tanto, |  | | que venga a ser tan vuestra como creo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y yo con Nise haré, por Dios, Liseo, | 580 | | lo que veréis. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues démonos las manos |  | | de amigos, no fingidos cortesanos, |  | | sino como si fuéramos de Grecia, |  | | adonde tanto el amistad se precia. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | Yo seré vuestro Pílades. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo, Orestes. | 585 | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XIII** | |
|  | |
| *Entren OTAVIO y TURÍN* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Son estos? | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  | | --- | | Ellos son. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Y esto es pendencia? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Conocieron de lejos tu presencia. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¡Caballeros...! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Señor, seáis bien venido. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Qué hacéis aquí? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Como Laurencio ha sido |  | | tan grande amigo mío, desde el día | 590 | | que vine a vuestra casa, o a la mía, |  | | venímonos a ver el campo solos, |  | | tratando nuestras cosas igualmente. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De esa amistad me huelgo extrañamente. |  | | Aquí vine a un jardín de un grande amigo, | 595 | | y me holgaré de que volváis conmigo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Será para los dos merced notable. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Vamos a acompañaros y serviros. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Turín, ¿por qué razón me has engañado? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Porque deben de haber disimulado, | 600 | | y porque, en fin, las más de las pendencias |  | | mueren por madurar; que a no ser esto, |  | | no hubiera mundo ya. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, di, ¿tan presto |  | | se pudo remediar? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué más remedio |  | | de no reñir que estar la vida en medio? | 605 | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XIV** | |
|  | |
| *Sala en casa de OTAVIO* |  |
|  | |
| *NISE y FINEA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De suerte te has engreído, |  | | que te voy desconociendo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De que eso digas me ofendo. |  | | Yo soy la que siempre he sido. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo te vi menos discreta. | 610 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y yo más segura a ti. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Quién te va trocando ansí? |  | | ¿Quién te da lición secreta? |  | | Otra memoria es la tuya. |  | | ¿Tomaste la anacardina? | 615 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ni de Ana, ni Catalina, |  | | he tomado lición suya. |  | | Aquello que ser solía |  | | soy; porque sólo he mudado |  | | un poco de más cuidado. | 620 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿No sabes que es prenda mía |  | | Laurencio? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Quién te empeñó |  | | a Laurencio? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | Amor. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿A fe? |  | | Pues yo le desempeñé, |  | | y el mismo amor me le dio. | 625 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Quitaréte dos mil vidas, |  | | boba dichosa! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No creas |  | | que si a Laurencio deseas, |  | | de Laurencio te dividas. |  | | En mi vida supe más | 630 | | de lo que él me ha dicho a mí: |  | | eso sé y eso aprendí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Muy aprovechada estás; |  | | mas de hoy más no ha de pasarte |  | | por el pensamiento. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Quién? | 635 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | Laurencio. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Dices muy bien. |  | | No volverás a quejarte. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si los ojos puso en ti, |  | | quítelos luego. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que sea |  | | como tú quieres. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Finea, | 640 | | déjame a Laurencio a mí. |  | | Marido tienes. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo creo |  | | que no riñamos las dos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | Quédate con Dios. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Adiós. |  | | | |
|  | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XV** | |
|  | |
| *Entre LAURENCIO, junto a FINEA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡En qué confusión me veo! | 645 | | ¿Hay mujer más desdichada? |  | | Todos dan en perseguirme. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Detente en un punto firme, |  | | fortuna veloz y airada, |  | | que ya parece que quieres | 650 | | ayudar mi pretensión. |  | | ¡Oh, qué gallarda ocasión! |  | | ¿Eres tú, mi bien? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No esperes, |  | | Laurencio, verme jamás. |  | | Todos me riñen por ti. | 655 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿qué te han dicho de mí? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Eso agora lo sabrás. |  | | ¿Dónde está mi pensamiento? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Tu pensamiento? | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Sí. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | En ti; |  | | porque si estuviera en mí, | 660 | | ya estuviera más contento. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Vesle tú? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo no, jamás. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Mi hermana me dijo aquí |  | | que no has de pasarme a mí |  | | por el pensamiento más; | 665 | | por eso allá te desvía, |  | | y no me pases por él. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Piensa que yo estoy en él, |  | | y echarme fuera querría. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tras esto dice que en mí | 670 | | pusiste los ojos... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Dice |  | | verdad; no lo contradice |  | | el alma que vive en ti. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues tú me has de quitar luego |  | | los ojos que me pusiste. | 675 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Cómo, si en amor consiste? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que me los quites, te ruego, |  | | con ese lienzo, de aquí, |  | | si yo los tengo en mis ojos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No más; cesen los enojos. | 680 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿No están en mis ojos? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues limpia y quita los tuyos, |  | | que no han de estar en los míos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Qué graciosos desvaríos! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ponlos a Nise en los suyos. | 685 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya te limpio con el lienzo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Quitástelos? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿No lo ves? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Laurencio, no se los des, |  | | que a sentir penas comienzo. |  | | Pues más hay: que el padre mío | 690 | | bravamente se ha enojado |  | | del abrazo que me has dado. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | ¿Mas que hay otro desvarío? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | También me le has de quitar; |  | | no ha de reñirme por esto. | 695 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Cómo ha de ser? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Siendo. Presto, |  | | ¿no sabes desabrazar? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | El brazo derecho alcé; |  | | tienes razón, ya me acuerdo, |  | | y agora alzaré el izquierdo, | 700 | | y el abrazo desharé. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Estoy ya desabrazada? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿No lo ves? | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XVI** | |
|  | |
| *Entre NISE* |  |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y yo también. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Huélgome, Nise, también, |  | | que ya no me dirás nada. | 705 | | Ya Laurencio no me pasa |  | | por el pensamiento a mí; |  | | ya los ojos le volví, |  | | pues que contigo se casa. |  | | En el lienzo los llevó, | 710 | | y ya me ha desabrazado. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tú sabrás lo que ha pasado, |  | | con harta risa. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aquí no. |  | | Vamos los dos al jardín, |  | | que tengo bien que riñamos. | 715 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Donde tú quisieres vamos. |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XVII** | |
|  | |
| *FINEA sola* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ella se le lleva, en fin. |  | | ¿Qué es esto, que me da pena |  | | de que se vaya con él? |  | | Estoy por irme tras él. | 720 | | ¿Qué es esto que me enajena |  | | de mi propia libertad? |  | | No me hallo sin Laurencio. |  | | Mi padre es este; silencio. |  | | Callad, lengua; ojos, hablad. | 725 | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XVIII** | |
|  | |
| *Entre OTAVIO, junto a FINEA* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Adónde está tu esposo? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo pensaba |  | | que lo primero, en viéndome, que hicieras |  | | fuera saber de mí si te obedezco. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | Pues eso, ¿a qué propósito? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Enojado |  | | no me dijiste aquí que era mal hecho | 730 | | abrazar a Laurencio? Pues agora |  | | que me desabrazase le he rogado, |  | | y el abrazo pasado me ha quitado. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Hay cosa semejante? ¡Pues di, bestia!, |  | | ¿otra vez le abrazabas? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que no es eso; | 735 | | fue la primera alzado el brazo |  | | derecho de Laurencio, aquel abrazo, |  | | y agora levantó, que bien me acuerdo, |  | | porque fuese al revés, el brazo izquierdo: |  | | luego desabrazada estoy agora. | 740 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Cuando pienso que sabe, más ignora; |  | | ello es querer hacer lo que no quiso |  | | Naturaleza. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Diga, señor padre: |  | | ¿cómo llaman aquello que se siente |  | | cuando se va con otro lo que se ama? | 745 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ese agravio de amor, celos se llama. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Celos? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿no lo ves, que son sus hijos? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | El padre puede dar mil regocijos; |  | | y es muy hombre de bien, mas desdichado |  | | en que tan malos hijos ha criado. | 750 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Luz va tiniendo ya. Pienso y bien pienso |  | | que si amor la enseñase, aprendería. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Con qué se quita el mal de celosía? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Con desenamorarse, si hay agravio, |  | | que es el remedio más prudente y sabio; | 755 | | que mientras hay amor ha de haber celos, |  | | pensión que dieron a este bien los cielos. |  | | ¿Adónde Nise está? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Junto a la fuente |  | | con Laurencio se fue. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Cansada cosa! |  | | Aprenda noramala a hablar su prosa, | 760 | | déjese de sonetos y canciones; |  | | allá voy a romperle las razones. |  | | | |
|  | |
| *Váyase* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Por quién, en el mundo, pasa |  | | esto que pasa por mí? |  | | ¿Qué vi denantes, qué vi, | 765 | | que así me enciende y me abrasa? |  | | Celos dice el padre mío |  | | que son. ¡Brava enfermedad! |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XIX** | |
|  | |
| *Entre LAURENCIO, junto a FINEA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Huyendo su autoridad, |  | | de enojarle me desvío; | 770 | | aunque, en parte, le agradezco |  | | que estorbase los enojos |  | | de Nise. Aquí están los ojos |  | | a cuyos rayos me ofrezco. |  | | ¿Señora?... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Estoy por no hablarte. | 775 | | ¿Cómo te fuiste con Nise? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No me fui porque yo quise. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Pues, ¿por qué? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Por no enojarte. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pésame si no te veo, |  | | y en viéndote ya querría | 780 | | que te fueses, y a porfía |  | | anda el temor y el deseo. |  | | Yo estoy celosa de ti; |  | | que ya sé lo que son celos; |  | | que su duro nombre, ¡ay cielos!, | 785 | | me dijo mi padre aquí; |  | | mas también me dio el remedio. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Cuál es? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Desenamorarme; |  | | porque podré sosegarme |  | | quitando el amor de en medio. | 790 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues eso, ¿cómo ha de ser? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | El que me puso el amor |  | | me le quitará mejor. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Un remedio suele haber. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Cuál? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Los que vienen aquí | 795 | | al remedio ayudarán. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XX** | |
|  | |
| *Entren PEDRO, DUARDO y FENISO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Finea y Laurencio están |  | | juntos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y él fuera de sí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Seáis los tres bien venidos |  | | a la ocasión más gallarda | 800 | | que se me pudo ofrecer; |  | | y pues de los dos el alma |  | | a sola Nise discreta |  | | inclina las esperanzas, |  | | oíd lo que con Finea | 805 | | para mi remedio pasa. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | En esta casa parece, |  | | según por los aires andas, |  | | que te ha dado hechizos Circe: |  | | nunca sales de esta casa. | 810 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo voy con mi pensamiento |  | | haciendo una rica traza |  | | para hacer oro de alquimia. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | La salud y el tiempo gastas. |  | | Igual sería, señor, | 815 | | cansarte, pues todo cansa, |  | | de pretender imposibles. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¡Calla, necio! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | El nombre basta |  | | para no callar jamás; |  | | que nunca los necios callan. | 820 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aguardadme mientras hablo |  | | a Finea. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  | | --- | | Parte. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hablaba, |  | | Finea hermosa, a los tres, |  | | para el remedio que aguardas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Quítame presto el amor, | 825 | | que con sus celos me mata! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si dices delante destos |  | | cómo me das la palabra |  | | de ser mi esposa y mujer, |  | | todos los celos se acaban. | 830 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Eso no más? Yo lo haré. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues tú misma a los tres llama. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Feniso, Duardo, Pedro! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LOS TRES | |  | | --- | | ¡Señora! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo doy palabra |  | | de ser esposa y mujer | 835 | | de Laurencio. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Cosa extraña! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Sois testigos desto? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LOS TRES | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues haz cuenta que estás sana |  | | del amor y de los celos |  | | que tanta pena te daban. | 840 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Dios te lo pague, Laurencio! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Venid los tres a mi casa; |  | | que tengo un notario allí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿con Finea te casas? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | Sí, Feniso. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Y Nise bella? | 845 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Troqué discreción por plata. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XXI** | |
|  | |
| *Quede FINEA sola, y entren NISE y OTAVIO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hablando estaba con él |  | | cosas de poca importancia. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Mira, hija, que estas cosas |  | | más deshonor que honor causan. | 850 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Es un honesto mancebo |  | | que de buenas letras trata, |  | | y téngole por maestro. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No era tan blanco en Granada |  | | Juan Latino, que la hija | 855 | | de un Veinticuatro enseñaba; |  | | y siendo negro y esclavo, |  | | porque fue su madre esclava |  | | del claro Duque de Sessa, |  | | honor de España y de Italia, | 860 | | se vino a casar con ella; |  | | que Gramática estudiaba, |  | | y la enseñó a conjugar |  | | en llegando al *amo*, *amas*; |  | | que así llama el matrimonio | 865 | | el latín. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De eso me guarda |  | | ser tu hija. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Murmuráis |  | | de mis cosas? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Aquí estaba |  | | esta loca? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya no es tiempo |  | | de reñirme. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Quién te habla?, | 870 | | ¿quién te riñe? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Nise y tú. |  | | Pues sepan que agora acaba |  | | de quitarme el amor todo |  | | Laurencio, como la palma. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | ¿Hay alguna bobería? | 875 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Díjome que se quitaba |  | | el amor con que le diese |  | | de su mujer la palabra; |  | | y delante de testigos |  | | se la he dado, y estoy sana | 880 | | del amor y de los celos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Esto es cosa temeraria! |  | | Esta, Nise, ha de quitarme |  | | la vida. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Palabra dabas |  | | de mujer a ningún hombre? | 885 | | ¿No sabes que estás casada? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Para quitarme el amor, |  | | qué importa? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No entre en mi casa |  | | Laurencio más. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Es error, |  | | porque Laurencio la engaña: | 890 | | que él y Liseo y lo dicen |  | | no más de para enseñarla. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De esa manera, yo callo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Oh! Pues, ¿con eso nos tapa |  | | la boca? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Vente conmigo. | 895 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿A dónde? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Donde te aguarda |  | | un notario. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Vamos. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ven. |  | | *[Aparte]* |  | | ¡Qué descanso de mis canas! |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |
|  | |
| *Vanse. NISE sola* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hame contado Laurencio |  | | que han tomado aquesta traza | 900 | | Liseo y él, para ver |  | | siaquella rudeza labran, |  | | y no me parece mal. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XXII** | |
|  | |
| *Entre LISEO, junto a NISE* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Hate contado mis ansias |  | | Laurencio, discreta Nise? | 905 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué me dices? ¿Sueñas o hablas? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Palabra me dio Laurencio |  | | de ayudar mis esperanzas, |  | | viendo que las pongo en ti. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pienso que de hablar te cansas | 910 | | con tu esposa, o que se embota |  | | en la dureza que labras |  | | el cuchillo de tu gusto, |  | | y, para volver a hablarla, |  | | quieres darle un filo en mí. | 915 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Verdades son las que trata |  | | contigo mi amor, no burlas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | ¿Estás loco? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Quien pensaba |  | | casarse con quien lo era, |  | | de pensarlo ha dado causa. | 920 | | Yo he mudado pensamiento. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Qué necedad, qué inconstancia, |  | | qué locura, error, traición |  | | a mi padre y a mi hermana! |  | | ¡Id en buen hora, Liseo! | 925 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Desa manera me pagas |  | | tan desatinado amor? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, si es desatino, ¡basta! |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XXIII** | |
|  | |
| *Entre LAURENCIO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Hablando están los dos solos. |  | | Si Liseo se declara, | 930 | | Nise ha de saber también |  | | que mis lisonjas la engañan. |  | | Creo que me ha visto ya. |  | | | |
|  | |
| *(Nise dice, como que habla con Liseo)* |  |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Oh, gloria de mi esperanza! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Yo vuestra gloria, señora? | 935 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aunque dicen que me tratas |  | | con traición, yo no lo creo; |  | | que no lo consiente el alma. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Traición, Nise? ¡Si en mi vida |  | | mostrare amor a tu hermana, | 940 | | me mate un rayo del cielo! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Es conmigo con quien habla |  | | Nise, y presume Liseo |  | | que le requiebra y regala. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Quiérome quitar de aquí; | 945 | | que con tal fuerza me engaña |  | | amor, que diré locuras. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No os vais, ¡oh Nise gallarda!; |  | | que después de los favores |  | | quedará sin vida el alma. | 950 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | ¡Dejadme pasar! | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XXIV** | |
|  | |
| *LISEO y LAURENCIO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Aquí |  | | estabas a mis espaldas? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | Agora entré. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Luego a ti |  | | te hablaba y te requebraba, |  | | aunque me miraba a mí, | 955 | | aquella discreta ingrata? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No tengas pena; las piedras |  | | ablanda el curso del agua. |  | | Yo sabré hacer que esta noche |  | | puedas, en mi nombre, hablarla. | 960 | | Esta es discreta, Liseo. |  | | No podrás, si no la engañas, |  | | quitalla del pensamiento |  | | el imposible que aguarda; |  | | porque yo soy de Finea. | 965 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si mi remedio no trazas, |  | | cuéntame loco de amor. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Déjame el remedio, y calla; |  | | porque burlar un discreto |  | | es la vitoria más alta. | 970 | | | |

**Acto III**

*Sala en casa de OTAVIO*

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **I** | |
|  | |
| *FINEA sola* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Amor, divina invención |  | | de conservar la belleza |  | | de nuestra naturaleza, |  | | o accidente o elección! |  | | Extraños efetos son | 5 | | los que de tu ciencia nacen, |  | | pues las tinieblas deshacen, |  | | pues hacen hablar los mudos, |  | | pues los ingenios más rudos |  | | sabios y discretos hacen. | 10 | | No ha dos meses que vivía |  | | a las bestias tan igual, |  | | que aun el alma racional |  | | parece que no tenía. |  | | Con el animal sentía | 15 | | y crecía con la planta; |  | | la razón divina y santa |  | | estaba eclipsada en mí, |  | | hasta que en tus rayos vi, |  | | a cuyo sol se levanta. | 20 | | Tú desataste y rompiste |  | | la escuridad de mi ingenio; |  | | tú fuiste el divino genio |  | | que me enseñaste, y me diste |  | | la luz con que me pusiste | 25 | | el nuevo ser en que estoy. |  | | Mil gracias, amor, te doy, |  | | pues me enseñaste tan bien, |  | | que dicen cuantos me ven |  | | que tan diferente soy. | 30 | | A pura imaginación |  | | de la fuerza de un deseo, |  | | en los palacios me veo |  | | de la divina razón. |  | | ¡Tanto la contemplación | 35 | | de un bien pudo levantarme! |  | | Ya puedes del grado honrarme, |  | | dándome a Laurencio, amor, |  | | con quien pudiste mejor, |  | | enamorada, enseñarme. | 40 | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **II** | |
|  | |
| *CLARA, junto a FINEA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | En grande conversación |  | | están de tu entendimiento. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Huélgome que esté contento |  | | mi padre en esta ocasión. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hablando está con Miseno | 45 | | de cómo lees, escribes |  | | y danzas; dice que vives |  | | con otra alma en cuerpo ajeno. |  | | Atribúyele al amor |  | | de Liseo este milagro. | 50 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | En otras aras consagro |  | | mis votos, Clara, mejor: |  | | Laurencio ha sido el maestro. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Como Pedro lo fue mío. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De verlos hablar me río | 55 | | en este milagro nuestro. |  | | ¡Gran fuerza tiene el amor, |  | | catedrático divino! |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **III** | |
|  | |
| *MISENO y OTAVIO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo pienso que es el camino |  | | de su remedio mejor. | 60 | | Y ya, pues habéis llegado |  | | a ver con entendimiento |  | | a Finea, que es contento |  | | nunca de vos esperado, |  | | a Nise podéis casar | 65 | | con este mozo gallardo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Vos solamente a Duardo |  | | pudiérades abonar. |  | | Mozuelo me parecía |  | | destos que se desvanecen, | 70 | | a quien agora enloquecen |  | | la arrogancia y la poesía. |  | | No son gracias de marido |  | | sonetos. Nise es tentada |  | | de académica endiosada, | 75 | | que a casa los ha traído. |  | | ¿Quién le mete a una mujer |  | | con Petrarca y Garcilaso, |  | | siendo su Virgilio y Taso |  | | hilar, labrar y coser? | 80 | | Ayer sus librillos vi, |  | | papeles y escritos varios; |  | | pensé que devocionarios, |  | | y desta suerte leí: |  | | *Historia de dos amantes*, | 85 | | sacada de lengua griega; |  | | *Rimas*, de Lope de Vega; |  | | *Galatea*, de Cervantes; |  | | el Camoes de Lisboa, |  | | *Los pastores de Belén*, | 90 | | *Comedias* de don Guillén |  | | de Castro, *Liras* de Ochoa; |  | | *Canción* que Luis Vélez dijo |  | | en la academia del duque |  | | de Pastrana; *Obras* de Luque; | 95 | | *Cartas* de don Juan de Arguijo; |  | | *Cien sonetos* de Liñán, |  | | *Obras* de Herrera el divino, |  | | el libro del *Peregrino*, |  | | y *El pícaro*, de Alemán. | 100 | | Mas, ¿qué os canso? Por mi vida, |  | | que se los quise quemar. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Casalda y veréisla estar |  | | ocupada y divertida |  | | en el parir y el criar. | 105 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Qué gentiles devociones! |  | | Si Duardo hace canciones, |  | | bien los podemos casar. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Es poeta caballero, |  | | no temáis; hará por gusto | 110 | | versos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Con mucho disgusto |  | | los de Nise considero. |  | | Temo, y en razón lo fundo, |  | | si en esto da, que ha de haber |  | | un don Quijote mujer | 115 | | que dé que reír al mundo. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **IV** | |
|  | |
| *Entren LISEO, NISE y TURÍN* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Trátasme con tal desdén, |  | | que pienso que he de apelar |  | | adonde sepan tratar |  | | mis obligaciones bien; | 120 | | pues advierte, Nise bella, |  | | que Finea ya es sagrado; |  | | que un amor tan desdeñado |  | | puede hallar remedio en ella. |  | | Tu desdén, que imaginé | 125 | | que pudiera ser menor, |  | | crece al paso de mi amor, |  | | medra al lado de mi fe; |  | | y su corto entendimiento |  | | ha llegado a tal mudanza, | 130 | | que puede dar esperanza |  | | a mi loco pensamiento. |  | | Pues, Nise, trátame bien; |  | | u de Finea el favor |  | | será sala en que mi amor | 135 | | apele de tu desdén. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Liseo, el hacerme fieros |  | | fuera bien considerado |  | | cuando yo te hubiera amado. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Los nobles y caballeros | 140 | | como yo, se han de estimar, |  | | no lo indigno de querer. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | El amor se ha de tener |  | | adonde se puede hallar; |  | | que como no es elección, | 145 | | sino sólo un accidente, |  | | tiénese donde se siente, |  | | no donde fuera razón. |  | | El amor no es calidad, |  | | sino estrellas que conciertan | 150 | | las voluntades que aciertan |  | | a ser una voluntad. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Eso, señora, no es justo; |  | | y no lo digo con celos, |  | | que pongáis culpa a los cielos | 155 | | de la bajeza del gusto. |  | | A lo que se hace mal, |  | | no es bien decir: «Fue mi estrella». |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo no pongo culpa en ella, |  | | ni en el curso celestial; | 160 | | porque Laurencio es un hombre |  | | tan hidalgo y caballero |  | | que puede honrar... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¡Paso! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Quiero |  | | que reverenciéis su nombre. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | A no estar tan cerca Otavio... | 165 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¡Oh, Liseo! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Oh, mi señor! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | ¡Que se ha de tener amor |  | | por fuerza! ¡Notable agravio! |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **V** | |
|  | |
| *Entre CELIA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | El maestro de danzar |  | | a las dos llama a lición. | 170 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Él viene a buena ocasión. |  | | Vaya un criado a llamar |  | | los músicos, porque vea |  | | Miseno a lo que ha llegado |  | | Finea. |  | | | |

|  |  |  |
| --- | --- | --- |
| **VI** | | |
|  | | |
|  |  |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Amor, engañado, | 175 | | hoy volveréis a Finea; |  | | que muchas veces amor, |  | | disfrazado en la venganza, |  | | hace una justa mudanza |  | | desde un desdén a un favor. | 180 | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Los músicos y él venían. |  | | | | |
|  | | |
|  | |  |
| *Entren los Músicos*   |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Muy bien venidos seáis! |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | ¡Hoy, pensamientos, vengáis |  | | los agravios que os hacían! |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | Nise y Finea... | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Señor!... | 185 | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Vaya aquí, por vida mía, |  | | el baile del otro día. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | ¡Todo es mudanzas amor! |  | | | | |
|  | | |
| *OTAVIO, MISENO y LISEO se sienten; los Músicos canten, y las dos bailen* | |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MÚSICOS | |  |  | | --- | --- | | *Amor, cansado de ver* |  | | *tanto interés en las damas,* | 190 | | *y que, por desnudo y pobre,* |  | | *ninguna favor le daba,* |  | | *pasóse a las Indias,* |  | | *vendió el aljaba,* |  | | *que más quiere doblones* | 195 | | *que vidas y almas.* |  | | *Trató en las Indias Amor,* |  | | *no en joyas, sedas y holandas,* |  | | *sino en ser sutil tercero* |  | | *de billetes y de cartas.* | 200 | | *Volvió de las Indias* |  | | *con oro y plata;* |  | | *que el Amor bien vestido* |  | | *rinde las damas.* |  | | *Paseó la corte Amor* | 205 | | *con mil cadenas y bandas;* |  | | *las damas, como le vían,* |  | | *desta manera le hablan:* |  | | *-¿De dó viene, de dó viene?* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá.* | 210 | | *-¿De dó viene el caballero?* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá,* |  | | *Trancelín en el sombrero,* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá.-* |  | | *cadenita de oro al cuello,* | 215 | | *-Viene de Panamá,* |  | | *en los brazos el griguiesco,* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá,* |  | | *las ligas con rapacejos,* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá,* | 220 | | *zapatos al uso nuevo,* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá,* |  | | *sotanilla a lo turquesco.* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá.-* |  | | *¿De dó viene, de dó viene?* | 225 | | *-Viene de Panamá.* |  | | *-¿De dó viene el hijo de algo?* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá,* |  | | *corto cuello y puños largos,* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá,* | 230 | | *la daga en banda colgando,* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá,* |  | | *guante de ámbar adobado,* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá,* |  | | *gran jugador del vocablo,* | 235 | | *-Viene de Panamá,* |  | | *no da dinero y da manos,* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá,* |  | | *enfadoso mal criado;* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá,* | 240 | | *es Amor, llámase indiano,* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá,* |  | | *es chapetón castellano,* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá,* |  | | *en criollo disfrazado.* | 245 | | *-Viene de Panamá.* |  | | *-¿De dó viene, de dó viene?* |  | | *-Viene de Panamá.* |  | | *¡Oh, qué bien parece Amor* |  | | *con las cadenas y galas!* | 250 | | *Que solo el dar enamora,* |  | | *porque es cifra de las gracias.* |  | | *Niñas, doncellas y viejas* |  | | *van a buscarle a su casa,* |  | | *más importunas que moscas,* | 255 | | *en viendo que hay miel de plata.* |  | | *Sobre cuál le ha de querer,* |  | | *de vivos celos se abrasan,* |  | | *y alrededor de su puerta* |  | | *unas tras otras le cantan:* | 260 | | *¡Deja las avellanicas, moro,* |  | | *que yo me las varearé!* |  | | *El Amor se ha vuelto godo,* |  | | *Que yo me las vareare.* |  | | *puños largos, cuello corto,* | 265 | | *Que yo me las varearé.* |  | | *sotanilla y liga de oro,* |  | | *Que yo me las varearé.* |  | | *sombrero y zapato romo,* |  | | *Que yo me las varearé.* | 270 | | *manga ancha, calzón angosto.* |  | | *Que yo me las varearé.* |  | | *Él habla mucho y da poco,* |  | | *Que yo me las varearé.* |  | | *es viejo, y dice que es mozo,* | 275 | | *Que yo me las varearé.* |  | | *es cobarde, y matamoros,* |  | | *Que yo me las varearé.* |  | | *Ya se descubrió los ojos.* |  | | *Que yo me las varearé.* | 280 | | *¡Amor loco y amor loco!* |  | | *Que yo me las varearé.* |  | | *¡Yo por vos, y vos por otro!* |  | | *Que yo me las varearé.* |  | | *Deja las avellanicas, moro,* | 285 | | *que yo me las varearé.* |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Gallardamente, por cierto! |  | | Dad gracias al cielo, Otavio, |  | | que os satisfizo el agravio. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hagamos este concierto | 290 | | de Duardo con Nise. |  | | Hijas, yo tengo que hablaros. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo nací para agradaros. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Quién hay que mi dicha crea? |  | | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **VII** | |
|  | |
| *Éntrense todos, y queden allí LISEO y TURÍN* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | Oye, Turín. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué me quieres? | 295 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Quiérote comunicar |  | | un nuevo gusto. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si es dar |  | | sobre tu amor pareceres, |  | | busca un letrado de amor. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo he mudado parecer. | 300 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | A ser dejar de querer |  | | a Nise, fuera el mejor. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | El mismo; porque Finea |  | | me ha de vengar de su agravio. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No te tengo por tan sabio | 305 | | que tal discreción te crea. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De nuevo quiero tratar |  | | mi casamiento. Allá voy. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De tu parecer estoy. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hoy me tengo de vengar. | 310 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Nunca ha de ser el casarse |  | | por vengarse de un desdén; |  | | que nunca se casó bien |  | | quien se casó por vengarse. |  | | Porque es gallarda Finea | 315 | | y porque el seso cobró |  | | -pues de Nise no sé yo |  | | que tan entendida sea-, |  | | será bien casarte luego. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Miseno ha venido aquí. | 320 | | Algo tratan contra mí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que lo mires bien te ruego. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡No hay más! ¡A pedirla voy! |  | | | |
|  | |
| *Váyase LISEO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | El cielo tus pasos guíe |  | | y del error te desvíe | 325 | | en que yo por Celia estoy. |  | | ¡Que enamore amor un hombre |  | | como yo! ¡Amor desatina! |  | | ¡Que una ninfa de cocina, |  | | para blasón de su nombre, | 330 | | ponga: «Aquí murió Turín |  | | entre sartenes y cazos»! |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **VIII** | |
|  | |
| *LAURENCIO y PEDRO, junto a TURÍN* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Todo es poner embarazos |  | | para que no llegue al fin. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Habla bajo, que hay escuchas! | 335 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¡Oh, Turín! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Señor Laurencio! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Tanta quietud y silencio? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hay obligaciones muchas |  | | para callar un discreto, |  | | y yo muy discreto soy. | 340 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Qué hay de Liseo? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | A eso voy. |  | | Fuese a casar. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Buen secreto! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Está tan enamorado |  | | de la señora Finea, |  | | si no es que venganza sea | 345 | | de Nise, que me ha jurado |  | | que luego se ha de casar. |  | | Y es ido a pedirla a Otavio. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Podré yo llamarme a agravio? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿él os puede agraviar? | 350 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Las palabras, ¿suelen darse |  | | para no cumplirlas? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De no casarse la dio. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Él no la quiebra en casarse. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Cómo? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Porque él no se casa | 355 | | con la que solía ser, |  | | sino con otra mujer. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Cómo es otra? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Porque pasa |  | | del no saber al saber; |  | | y con saber le obligó. | 360 | | ¿Mandáis otra cosa? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  | | --- | | Pues adiós. | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **IX** | |
|  | |
| *LAURENCIO y PEDRO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué puedo hacer? |  | | ¡Ay, Pedro! Lo que temí |  | | y tenía sospechado |  | | del ingenio que ha mostrado | 365 | | Finea, se cumple aquí. |  | | Como la ha visto Liseo |  | | tan discreta, la afición |  | | ha puesto en la discreción. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y en el oro algún deseo. | 370 | | Cansóle la bobería. |  | | la discreción le animó. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **X** | |
|  | |
| *Entre FINEA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Clara, Laurencio, me dio |  | | nuevas de tanta alegría! |  | | Luego a mi padre dejé, | 375 | | y aunque ella me lo callara, |  | | yo tengo quien me avisara, |  | | que es el alma, que te ve |  | | por mil vidros y cristales, |  | | por donde quiera que vas, | 380 | | porque en mis ojos estás |  | | con memorias inmortales. |  | | Todo este grande lugar |  | | tiene colgado de espejos |  | | mi amor, juntos y parejos, | 385 | | para poderte mirar. |  | | Si vuelvo el rostro allí, veo |  | | tu imagen; si a estotra parte, |  | | también; y ansí viene a darte |  | | nombre de sol mi deseo; | 390 | | que en cuantos espejos mira |  | | y fuentes de pura plata, |  | | su bello rostro retrata |  | | y su luz divina espira. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Ay, Finea! ¡A Dios pluguiera | 395 | | que nunca tu entendimiento |  | | llegara, como ha llegado, |  | | a la mudanza que veo! |  | | Necio, me tuvo seguro, |  | | y sospechoso discreto; | 400 | | porque yo no te quería |  | | para pedirte consejo. |  | | ¿Qué libro esperaba yo |  | | de tus manos? ¿En qué pleito |  | | habías jamás de hacerme | 405 | | información en derecho? |  | | Inocente te quería, |  | | porque una mujer cordero |  | | es tusón de su marido, |  | | que puede traerla al pecho. | 410 | | Todas sabéis lo que basta |  | | para casada, a lo menos; |  | | no hay mujer necia en el mundo, |  | | porque el no hablar no es defecto. |  | | Hable la dama en la reja, | 415 | | escriba, diga concetos |  | | en el coche, en el estrado, |  | | de amor, de engaños, de celos; |  | | pero la casada sepa |  | | de su familia el gobierno; | 420 | | porque el más discreto hablar |  | | no es santo como el silencio. |  | | Mira el daño que me vino |  | | de transformarse tu ingenio, |  | | pues va a pedirte, ¡ay de mí!, | 425 | | para su mujer, Liseo. |  | | Ya deja a Nise, tu hermana. |  | | Él se casa. Yo soy muerto. |  | | ¡Nunca, plega a Dios, hablaras! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿De qué me culpas, Laurencio? | 430 | | A pura imaginación |  | | del alto merecimiento |  | | de tus prendas, aprendí |  | | el que tú dices que tengo. |  | | Por hablarte supe hablar, | 435 | | vencida de tus requiebros; |  | | por leer en tus papeles, |  | | libros difíciles leo; |  | | para responderte escribo. |  | | No he tenido otro maestro | 440 | | que amor; amor me ha enseñado. |  | | Tú eres la ciencia que aprendo. |  | | ¿De qué te quejas de mí? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De mi desdicha me quejo; |  | | pero, pues ya sabes tanto, | 445 | | dame, señora, un remedio. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | El remedio es fácil. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Cómo? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si, porque mi rudo ingenio, |  | | que todos aborrecían, |  | | se ha transformado en discreto, | 450 | | Liseo me quiere bien, |  | | con volver a ser tan necio |  | | como primero le tuve, |  | | me aborrecerá Liseo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿sabrás fingirte boba? | 455 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sí; que lo fui mucho tiempo, |  | | y el lugar donde se nace |  | | saben andarle los ciegos. |  | | Demás desto, las mujeres |  | | naturaleza tenemos | 460 | | tan pronta para fingir |  | | o con amor o con miedo, |  | | que, antes de nacer, fingimos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Antes de nacer? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo pienso |  | | que en tu vida lo has oído. | 465 | | Escucha. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya escucho atento. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Cuando estamos en el vientre |  | | de nuestras madres, hacemos |  | | entender a nuestros padres, |  | | para engañar sus deseos, | 470 | | que somos hijos varones; |  | | y así verás que, contentos, |  | | acuden a sus antojos |  | | con amores, con requiebros, |  | | y esperando el mayorazgo | 475 | | tras tantos regalos hechos, |  | | sale una hembra que corta |  | | la esperanza del suceso. |  | | Según esto, si pensaron |  | | que era varón, y hembra vieron, | 480 | | antes de nacer fingimos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Es evidente argumento; |  | | pero yo veré si sabes |  | | hacer, Finea, tan presto |  | | mudanza de extremos tales. | 485 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Paso, que viene Liseo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Allí me voy a esconder. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Ve presto. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sígueme, Pedro. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | En muchos peligros andas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tal estoy, que no los siento. | 490 | | | |
|  | |
| *Escóndanse LAURENCIO y PEDRO* |  |

|  |  |  |
| --- | --- | --- |
| **XI** | | |
|  | | |
| *Entre LISEO con TURÍN y FINEA* |  |  |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | En fin, queda concertado. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | En fin, estaba del cielo |  | | que fuese tu esposa. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Aquí |  | | está mi primero dueño. |  | | ¿No sabéis, señora mía, | 495 | | cómo ha tratado Miseno |  | | casar a Duardo y Nise, |  | | y cómo yo también quiero |  | | que se hagan nuestras bodas |  | | con las suyas? |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No lo creo; | 500 | | que Nise me ha dicho a mí |  | | que está casada en secreto |  | | con vos. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¿Conmigo? | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No sé |  | | si érades vos u Oliveros. |  | | ¿Quién sois vos? |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Hay tal mudanza? | 505 | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Quién decís, que no me acuerdo? |  | | Y si mudanza os parece, |  | | ¿cómo no veis que en el cielo |  | | cada mes hay nuevas lunas? |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Válgame el cielo! ¿Qué es esto? | 510 | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Si le vuelve el mal pasado? |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, decidme: si tenemos |  | | luna nueva cada mes, |  | | ¿adónde están? ¿Qué se han hecho |  | | las viejas de tantos años? | 515 | | ¿Daisos por vencido? |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Temo |  | | que era locura su mal. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Guárdanlas para remiendos |  | | de las que salen menguadas. |  | | ¡Véis ahí que sois un necio! | 520 | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Señora, mucho me admiro |  | | de que ayer tan alto ingenio |  | | mostrásedes. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, señor, |  | | agora ha llegado al vuestro; |  | | que la mayor discreción | 525 | | es acomodarse al tiempo. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Eso dijo el mayor sabio. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Y esto escucha el mayor necio. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Quitado me habéis el gusto. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No he tocado a vos, por cierto; | 530 | | mirad que se habrá caído. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | ¡Linda ventura tenemos! |  | | Pídole a Otavio a Finea, |  | | y cuando a decirle vengo |  | | el casamiento tratado, | 535 | | hallo que a su ser se ha vuelto. |  | | Volved, mi señora, en vos, |  | | considerando que os quiero |  | | por mi dueño, para siempre. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Por mi dueña, majadero! | 540 | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Así tratáis un esclavo |  | | que os da el alma? |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Cómo es eso? |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | Que os doy el alma. | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué es alma? |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Alma? El gobierno del cuerpo. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Cómo es un alma? | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Señora, | 545 | | como filósofo puedo |  | | difinirla, no pintarla. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿No es alma la que en el peso |  | | le pintan a San Miguel? |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | También a un ángel ponemos | 550 | | alas y cuerpo, y, en fin, |  | | es un espíritu bello. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | ¿Hablan las almas? | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Las almas |  | | obran por los instrumentos, |  | | por los sentidos y partes | 555 | | de que se organiza el cuerpo. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Longaniza come el alma?... |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  | | --- | | ¿En qué te cansas? | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No puedo |  | | pensar sino que es locura. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pocas veces de los necios | 560 | | se hacen los locos, señor. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | Pues, ¿de quién? | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | De los discretos; |  | | porque de diversas causas |  | | nacen efetos diversos. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Ay, Turín! Vuélvome a Nise. | 565 | | Más quiero el entendimiento |  | | que toda la voluntad. |  | | Señora, pues mi deseo, |  | | que era de daros mi alma, |  | | no pudo tener efeto, | 570 | | quedad con Dios. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Soy medrosa |  | | de las almas, porque temo |  | | que de tres que andan pintadas, |  | | puede ser la del infierno. |  | | La noche de los difuntos | 575 | | no saco de puro miedo |  | | la cabeza de la ropa. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ella es loca sobre necio, |  | | que es la peor guarnición. |  | | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Decirlo a su padre quiero. | 580 | | | | |
|  | | |
|  | |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XII** | |
|  | |
| *LAURENCIO y PEDRO, junto a FINEA* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Puedo salir?... | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué te dice? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que ha sido el mejor remedio |  | | que pudiera imaginarse. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sí; pero siento, en extremo, |  | | volverme a boba, aun fingida. | 585 | | Y, pues fingida lo siento, |  | | los que son bobos de veras, |  | | ¿cómo viven? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No sintiendo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues si un tonto ver pudiera |  | | su entendimiento a un espejo, | 590 | | ¿no fuera huyendo de sí? |  | | La razón de estar contentos |  | | es aquella confianza |  | | de tenerse por discretos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Háblame, Laurencio mío, | 595 | | sutilmente, porque quiero |  | | desquitarme de ser boba. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XIII** | |
|  | |
| *Entren NISE y CELIA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Siempre Finea y Laurencio |  | | juntos. Sin duda se tienen |  | | amor. No es posible menos. | 600 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo sospecho que te engañan. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Desde aquí los escuchemos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué puede, hermosa Finea, |  | | decirte el alma, aunque sale |  | | de sí misma, que se iguale | 605 | | a lo que mi amor desea? |  | | Allá mis sentidos tienes: |  | | escoge de lo sutil, |  | | presumiendo que en abril |  | | por amenos prados vienes. | 610 | | Corta las diversas flores, |  | | porque en mi imaginación, |  | | tales los deseos son. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Estos, Celia, ¿son amores, |  | | o regalos de cuñado? | 615 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Regalos deben de ser; |  | | pero no quisiera ver |  | | cuñado tan regalado. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Ay, Dios, si llegase día |  | | en que viese mi esperanza | 620 | | su posesión! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué no alcanza |  | | una amorosa porfía? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  | | --- | | Tu hermana, escuchando. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Ay, cielos! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Vuélvome a boba. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Eso importa. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Vete. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Espérate, reporta | 625 | | los pasos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Vendrás con celos? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Celos son para sospechas; |  | | traiciones son las verdades. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Qué presto te persuades |  | | y de engaños te aprovechas! | 630 | | ¿Querrás buscar ocasión |  | | para querer a Liseo, |  | | a quien ya tan cerca veo |  | | de tu boda y posesión? |  | | Bien haces, Nise; haces bien. | 635 | | Levántame un testimonio, |  | | porque deste matrimonio |  | | a mí la culpa me den. |  | | Y si te quieres casar, |  | | déjame a mí. |  | | | |
|  | |
| *Váse* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Bien me dejas! | 640 | | ¡Vengo a quejarme, y te quejas! |  | | ¿Aún no me dejas hablar? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tiene razón mi señor. |  | | Cásate, y acaba ya. |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XIV** | |
|  | |
| *FINEA, NISE y CELIA* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | ¿Qué es aquesto? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que se va | 645 | | Pedro con el mismo humor, |  | | y aquí viene bien que Pedro |  | | es tan ruin como su amo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya le aborrezco y desamo. |  | | ¡Qué bien con las quejas medro! | 650 | | Pero fue linda invención |  | | anticiparse a reñir. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y el Pedro, ¿quién le vio ir |  | | tan bellaco y socarrón? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y tú, que disimulando | 655 | | estás la traición que has hecho, |  | | lleno de engaños el pecho |  | | con que me estás abrasando, |  | | pues, como sirena, fuiste |  | | medio pez, medio mujer, | 660 | | pues de animal a saber |  | | para mi daño veniste, |  | | ¿piensas que le has de gozar? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Tú me has dado pez a mí, |  | | ni sirena, ni yo fui | 665 | | jamás contigo a la mar? |  | | ¡Anda, Nise, que estás loca! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | ¿Qué es esto? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | A tonta se vuelve. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡A una cosa te resuelve! |  | | Tanto el furor me provoca, | 670 | | que el alma te he de sacar. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Tienes cuenta de perdón? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Téngola de tu traición; |  | | pero no de perdonar. |  | | ¿El alma piensas quitarme | 675 | | en quien el alma tenía? |  | | Dame el alma que solía, |  | | traidora hermana, animarme. |  | | Mucho debes de saber, |  | | pues del alma me desalmas. | 680 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Todos me piden sus almas: |  | | almario debo de ser. |  | | Toda soy hurtos y robos. |  | | Montes hay donde no hay gente: |  | | yo me iré a meter serpiente. | 685 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que ya no es tiempo de bobos. |  | | ¡Dame el alma! |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XV** | |
|  | |
| *OTAVIO con FENISO y DUARDO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué es aquesto? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Almas me piden a mí; |  | | ¿soy yo Purgatorio? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Sí! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues procura salir presto. | 690 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿No sabremos la ocasión |  | | de vuestro enojo? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Querer |  | | Nise, a fuerza de saber, |  | | pedir lo que no es razón. |  | | Almas, sirenas y peces | 695 | | dice que me ha dado a mí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Hase vuelto a boba? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tú pienso que la embobeces. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ella me ha dado ocasión; |  | | que me quita lo que es mío. | 700 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Se ha vuelto a su desvarío. |  | | ¡Muerto soy! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Desdichas son. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿No decían que ya estaba |  | | con mucho seso? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Ay de mí! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | Yo quiero hablar claro. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Di. | 705 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Todo tu daño se acaba |  | | con mandar resueltamente, |  | | pues, como padre, podrás, |  | | y, aunque en todo, en esto más, |  | | pues tu honor no lo consiente, | 710 | | que Laurencio no entre aquí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Por qué? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Porque él ha causado |  | | que esta no se haya casado |  | | y que yo te enoje a ti. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¡eso es muy fácil cosa! | 715 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues tu casa en paz tendrás. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XVI** | |
|  | |
| *PEDRO y LAURENCIO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Contento, en efeto, estás! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Invención maravillosa! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya Laurencio viene aquí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Laurencio, cuando labré | 720 | | esta casa, no pensé |  | | que academia instituí; |  | | ni cuando a Nise criaba |  | | pensé que para poeta, |  | | sino que a mujer perfecta, | 725 | | con las letras la enseñaba. |  | | Siempre alabé la opinión |  | | de que a la mujer prudente, |  | | con saber medianamente, |  | | le sobra la discreción. | 730 | | No quiero más poesías: |  | | los sonetos se acabaron, |  | | y las músicas cesaron; |  | | que son ya breves mis días. |  | | Por allá los podréis dar, | 735 | | si os faltan telas y rasos; |  | | que no hay tales Garcilasos |  | | como dinero y callar. |  | | Este venden por dos reales, |  | | y tiene tantos sonetos, | 740 | | elegantes y discretos, |  | | que vos no los haréis tales. |  | | Ya no habéis de entrar aquí |  | | con este achaque. Id con Dios. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Es muy justo, como vos | 745 | | me deis a mi esposa a mí; |  | | que vos hacéis vuestro gusto |  | | en vuestra casa, y es bien |  | | que en la mía yo también |  | | haga lo que fuere justo. | 750 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué mujer os tengo yo? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | Finea. | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Estás loco? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aquí |  | | hay tres testigos del *sí* |  | | que ha más de un mes que me dio. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Quién son? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Duardo, Feniso | 755 | | y Pedro. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Es esto verdad? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ella, de su voluntad, |  | | Otavio, dársele quiso. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  | | --- | | Así es verdad. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿No bastaba |  | | que mi señor lo dijese? | 760 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que, como simple, le diese |  | | a un hombre que le engañaba, |  | | no ha de valer. Di, Finea: |  | | ¿no eres simple? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Cuando quiero. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Y cuando no? | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | No. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué espero? | 765 | | Mas, cuando simple no sea, |  | | con Liseo está casada. |  | | A la Justicia me voy. |  | | | |
|  | |
| *Váyase OTAVIO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ven, Celia, tras él; que estoy |  | | celosa y desesperada. | 770 | | | |
|  | |
| *Váyanse NISE y CELIA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Id, por Dios, tras él los dos! |  | | No me suceda un disgusto. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Por vuestra amistad es justo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Mal hecho ha sido, por Dios! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Ya habláis como desposado | 775 | | de Nise? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Piénsolo ser. |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XVII** | |
|  | |
| *LAURENCIO, FINEA; luego CLARA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Todo se ha echado a perder; |  | | Nise mi amor le ha contado. |  | | ¿Qué remedio puede haber, |  | | si a verte no puedo entrar? | 780 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | No salir. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Dónde he de estar? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Yo no te sabré esconder? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Dónde? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | En casa hay un desván |  | | famoso para esconderte. |  | | ¡Clara! |  | | | |
|  | |
| *Entre CLARA* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  | | --- | | ¡Mi señora! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Advierte | 785 | | que mis desdichas están |  | | en tu mano. Con secreto |  | | lleva a Laurencio al desván. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  | | --- | | ¿Y a Pedro? | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | También. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Galán, |  | | camine. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo te prometo | 790 | | que voy temblando. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿De qué? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Clara, en llegando la hora |  | | de muquir, di a tu señora |  | | que algún sustento nos dé. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Otro comerá peor | 795 | | que tú. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Yo al desván? ¿Soy gato? |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XVIII** | |
|  | |
| *FINEA sola* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Por qué de imposible trato, |  | | este mi público amor? |  | | En llegándose a saber |  | | una voluntad, no hay cosa | 800 | | más triste y escandalosa |  | | para una honrada mujer. |  | | Lo que tiene de secreto, |  | | esto tiene amor de gusto. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XIX** | |
|  | |
| *Entre OTAVIO, junto a FINEA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | *[Aparte]* | | Harélo, aunque fuera justo | 805 | | poner mi enojo en efeto. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Vienes ya desenojado? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Por los que me lo han pedido. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Perdón mil veces te pido. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Y Laurencio? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aquí ha jurado | 810 | | no entrar en la Corte más. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¿A dónde se fue? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | A Toledo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¡Bien hizo! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No tengas miedo |  | | que vuelva a Madrid jamás. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hija, pues simple naciste, | 815 | | y por milagros de amor |  | | dejaste el pasado error, |  | | ¿cómo el ingenio perdiste? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué quiere, padre? A la fe, |  | | de bobos no hay que fiar. | 820 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo lo pienso remediar. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Cómo, si el otro se fue? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues te engañan fácilmente |  | | los hombres, en viendo alguno, |  | | te has de esconder; que ninguno | 825 | | te ha de ver eternamente. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Pues, ¿dónde? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | En parte secreta. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Será bien en un desván, |  | | donde los gatos están? |  | | ¿Quieres tú que allí me meta? | 830 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Adonde te diere gusto, |  | | como ninguno te vea. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¡alto! En el desván sea; |  | | tú lo mandas, será justo. |  | | Y advierte que lo has mandado. | 835 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¡Una y mil veces! | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XX** | |
|  | |
| *Entren LISEO y TURÍN* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si quise |  | | con tantas veras a Nise, |  | | mal puedo haberla olvidado. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hombres vienen. Al desván, |  | | padre, yo voy a esconderme. | 840 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hija, Liseo no importa. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Al desván, padre: hombres vienen. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿no ves que son de casa? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No yerra quien obedece. |  | | No me ha de ver hombre más, | 845 | | sino quien mi esposo fuere. |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XXI** | |
|  | |
| *LISEO y OTAVIO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tus disgustos he sabido. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | Soy padre... | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Remedio puedes |  | | poner en aquestas cosas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya le he puesto, con que dejen | 850 | | mi casa los que la inquietan. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | Pues, ¿de qué manera? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Fuese |  | | Laurencio a Toledo ya. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¡Qué bien has hecho! | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Y tú crees |  | | vivir aquí, sin casarte? | 855 | | Porque el mismo inconveniente |  | | se sigue de que aquí estés. |  | | Hoy hace, Liseo, dos meses |  | | que me traes en palabras. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Bien mi término agradeces! | 860 | | Vengo a casar con Finea, |  | | forzado de mis parientes, |  | | y hallo una simple mujer. |  | | ¿Que la quiera, Otavio, quieres? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tienes razón. ¡Acabóse! | 865 | | Pero es limpia, hermosa, y tiene |  | | tanto doblón que podría |  | | doblar el mármol más fuerte. |  | | ¿Querías cuarenta mil |  | | ducados con una Fénix? | 870 | | ¿Es coja o manca Finea? |  | | ¿Es ciega? Y, cuando lo fuese, |  | | ¿hay falta en Naturaleza |  | | que con oro no se afeite? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | Dame a Nise. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No ha dos horas | 875 | | que Miseno la promete |  | | a Duardo, en nombre mío; |  | | y, pues hablo claramente, |  | | hasta mañana a estas horas |  | | te doy para que lo pienses; | 880 | | porque, de no te casar, |  | | para que en tu vida entres |  | | por las puertas de mi casa |  | | que tan enfadada tienes. |  | | Haz cuenta que eres poeta. | 885 | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XXII** | |
|  | |
| *LISEO y TURÍN* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¿Qué te dice? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que te aprestes, |  | | y con Finea te cases; |  | | porque si veinte mereces, |  | | por que sufras una boba |  | | te añaden los otros veinte. | 890 | | Si te dejas de casar, |  | | te han de decir más de siete: |  | | «¡Miren la bobada!» |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Vamos; |  | | que mi temor se resuelve |  | | de no se casar a bobas. | 895 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Que se casa me parece |  | | a bobas, quien sin dineros |  | | en tanta costa se mete. |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XXIII** | |
|  | |
| *Entren FINEA y CLARA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hasta agora, bien nos va. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No hayas miedo que se entienda. | 900 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Oh, cuánto a mi amada prenda |  | | deben mis sentidos ya! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Con la humildad que se pone |  | | en el desván! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No te espantes; |  | | que es propia casa de amantes, | 905 | | aunque Laurencio perdone. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Y quién no vive en desván |  | | de cuantos hoy han nacido!... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Algún humilde que ha sido |  | | de los que en lo bajo están. | 910 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡En el desván vive el hombre |  | | que se tiene por más sabio |  | | que Platón! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Hácele agravio; |  | | que fue divino su nombre. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡En el desván, el que anima | 915 | | a grandezas su desprecio! |  | | ¡En el desván más de un necio |  | | que por discreto se estima!... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Quieres que te diga yo |  | | cómo es falta natural | 920 | | de necios, no pensar mal |  | | de sí mismos? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Cómo no? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | La confianza secreta |  | | tanto el sentido les roba, |  | | que, cuando era yo muy boba, | 925 | | me tuve por muy discreta; |  | | y como es tan semejante |  | | el saber con la humildad, |  | | ya que tengo habilidad, |  | | me tengo por ignorante. | 930 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡En el desván vive bien |  | | un matador criminal, |  | | cuya muerte natural |  | | ninguno o pocos la ven! |  | | ¡En el desván, de mil modos, | 935 | | y sujeto a mil desgracias, |  | | aquel que diciendo gracias |  | | es desgraciado con todos! |  | | ¡En el desván, una dama |  | | que, creyendo a quien la inquieta, | 940 | | por una hora de discreta, |  | | pierde mil años de fama! |  | | ¡En el desván, un preciado |  | | de lindo, y es un caimán, |  | | pero tiénele el desván, | 945 | | como el espejo, engañado! |  | | ¡En el desván, el que canta |  | | con voz de carro de bueyes, |  | | y el que viene de Muleyes |  | | y a los godos se levanta! | 950 | | ¡En el desván, el que escribe |  | | versos legos y donados, |  | | y el que, por vanos cuidados, |  | | sujeto a peligros vive! |  | | Finalmente... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Espera un poco; | 955 | | que viene mi padre aquí. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XXIV** | |
|  | |
| *OTAVIO, MISENO, DUARDO, FENISO* |  |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  | | --- | | ¿Eso le dijiste? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Sí; |  | | que a tal furor me provoco. |  | | No ha de quedar, ¡vive el cielo!, |  | | en mi casa quien me enoje. | 960 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y es justo que se despoje |  | | de tanto necio mozuelo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pidióme graciosamente |  | | que con Nise le casase; |  | | díjele que no pensase | 965 | | en tal cosa eternamente, |  | | y así estoy determinado. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Oíd, que está aquí Finea. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | Hija, escucha... | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Cuando vea, |  | | como me lo habéis mandado, | 970 | | que estáis solo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Espera un poco, |  | | que te he casado. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Que nombres |  | | casamiento donde hay hombres!... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Luego, ¿tenéisme por loco? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No, padre; mas hay aquí | 975 | | hombres, y voyme al desván. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Aquí por tu bien están. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Vengo a que os sirváis de mí. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Jesús, señor! ¿No sabéis |  | | lo que mi padre ha mandado? | 980 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Oye; que hemos concertado |  | | que os caséis. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Gracia tenéis! |  | | No ha de haber hija obediente |  | | como yo. Voyme al desván. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, ¿no es Feniso galán? | 985 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Al desván, señor pariente! |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XXV** | |
|  | |
| *DUARDO, OTAVIO, MISENO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Cómo vos le habéis mandado |  | | que de los hombres se esconda? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No sé, por Dios, qué os responda. |  | | Con ella estoy enojado, | 990 | | o con mi contraria estrella. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya viene Liseo aquí. |  | | Determinaos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo, por mí, |  | | ¿qué puedo decir sin ella? |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XXVI** | |
|  | |
| *LISEO, NISE y TURÍN. Y después CELIA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ya que me parto de ti, | 995 | | sólo quiero que conozcas |  | | lo que pierdo por quererte. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Conozco que tu persona |  | | merece ser estimada; |  | | y como mi padre agora | 1000 | | venga bien en que seas mío, |  | | yo me doy por tuya toda; |  | | que en los agravios de amor |  | | es la venganza gloriosa. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Ay, Nise! ¡Nunca te vieran | 1005 | | mis ojos, pues fuiste sola |  | | de mayor incendio en mí |  | | que fue Elena para Troya! |  | | Vine a casar con tu hermana, |  | | y, en viéndote, Nise hermosa, | 1010 | | mi libertad salteaste, |  | | del alma preciosa joya. |  | | Nunca más el oro pudo |  | | con su fuerza poderosa, |  | | que ha derribado montañas | 1015 | | de costumbres generosas, |  | | humillar mis pensamientos |  | | a la bajeza que doran |  | | los resplandores, que a veces |  | | ciegan tan altas personas. | 1020 | | Nise, ¡duélete de mí, |  | | ya que me voy! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Tiempla agora, |  | | bella Nise, tus desdenes; |  | | que se va amor por la posta |  | | a la casa del agravio. | 1025 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Turín, las lágrimas solas |  | | de un hombre han sido en el mundo |  | | veneno para nosotras. |  | | No han muerto tantas mujeres |  | | de fuego, hierro y ponzoña, | 1030 | | como de lágrimas vuestras. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues mira un hombre que llora. |  | | ¿Eres tú bárbara tigre? |  | | ¿Eres pantera? ¿Eres onza? |  | | ¿Eres duende? ¿Eres lechuza? | 1035 | | ¿Eres Circe? ¿Eres Pandorga? |  | | ¿Cuál de aquestas cosas eres, |  | | que no estoy bien en historias? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿No basta decir que estoy |  | | rendida? |  | | | |
|  | |
| *Entre CELIA* |  |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Escucha, señora... | 1040 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  | | --- | | ¿Eres Celia? | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  | | --- | | Sí. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Qué quieres, |  | | que ya todos se alborotan |  | | de verte venir turbada? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | Hija, ¿qué es esto? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Una cosa |  | | que os ha de poner cuidado. | 1045 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  | | --- | | ¿Cuidado? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Yo vi que agora |  | | llevaba Clara un tabaque |  | | con dos perdices, dos lonjas, |  | | dos gazapos, pan, toallas, |  | | cuchillo, salero y bota. | 1050 | | Seguíla, y vi que al desván |  | | caminaba... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Celia loca, |  | | para la boba sería. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Qué bien que comen las bobas! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Ha dado en irse al desván, | 1055 | | porque hoy le dije a la tonta |  | | que, para que no la engañen, |  | | en viendo un hombre, se esconda. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Eso fuera, a no haber sido |  | | para saberlo, curiosa. | 1060 | | Subí tras ella, y cerró |  | | la puerta... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues bien, ¿qué importa? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿No importa, si en aquel suelo, |  | | como si fuera una alfombra |  | | de las que la primavera | 1065 | | en prados fértiles borda, |  | | tendió unos blancos manteles, |  | | a quien hicieron corona |  | | dos hombres, ella y Finea? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Hombres? ¡Buena va mi honra! | 1070 | | ¿Conocístelos? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CELIA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No pude. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Mira bien si se te antoja, |  | | Celia. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No será Laurencio, |  | | que está en Toledo. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Reporta |  | | el enojo. Yo y Feniso | 1075 | | subiremos. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Reconozcan |  | | la casa que han afrentado! |  | | | |
|  | |
|  |  |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XXVII** | |
|  | |
| *FENISO, NISE, DUARDO, LISEO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No suceda alguna cosa. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | No hará; que es cuerdo mi padre. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Cierto que es divina joya | 1080 | | el entendimiento. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Siempre |  | | yerra, Duardo, el que ignora. |  | | Desto os podéis alabar, |  | | Nise, pues en toda Europa |  | | no tiene igual vuestro ingenio. | 1085 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Con su hermosura conforma. |  | | | |

|  |  |
| --- | --- |
| **XXVIII** | |
|  | |
| *Salga, con la espada desnuda, OTAVIO siguiendo a LAURENCIO, FINEA, CLARA y PEDRO* |  |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Mil vidas he de quitar |  | | a quien el honor me roba! |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Detened la espada, Otavio! |  | | Yo soy, que estoy con mi esposa. | 1090 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  | | --- | | ¿Es Laurencio? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿No lo veis? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Quién pudiera ser agora, |  | | sino Laurencio, mi infamia? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Pues, padre, ¿de qué se enoja? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Oh infame! ¿No me dijiste | 1095 | | que el dueño de mi deshonra |  | | estaba en Toledo? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Padre, |  | | si aqueste desván se nombra |  | | «Toledo», verdad le dije. |  | | Alto está, pero no importa; | 1100 | | que más lo estaba el Alcázar |  | | y la Puente de Segovia, |  | | y hubo Juanelos que a él |  | | subieron agua sin sogas. |  | | ¿Él, no me mandó esconder? | 1105 | | Pues suya es la culpa toda. |  | | Sola en un desván, ¡mal año! |  | | Ya sabe que soy medrosa... |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¡Cortaréle aquella lengua! |  | | ¡Rasgaréle aquella boca! | 1110 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Este es caso sin remedio. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Y la Clara socarrona |  | | que llevaba los gazapos? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | CLARA | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Mandómelo mi señora. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Otavio, vos sois discreto: | 1115 | | ya sabéis que tanto monta |  | | cortar como desatar. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | ¿Cuál me aconsejáis que escoja? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | MISENO | |  | | --- | | Desatar. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Señor Feniso, |  | | si la voluntad es obra, | 1120 | | recibid la voluntad. |  | | Y vos, Düardo, la propia; |  | | que Finea se ha casado, |  | | y Nise, en fin, se conforma |  | | con Liseo, que me ha dicho | 1125 | | que la quiere y que la adora. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Si fue, señor, su ventura, |  | | ¡paciencia! Que el premio gozan |  | | de sus justas esperanzas. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Todo corre viento en popa. | 1130 | | ¿Daré a Finea la mano? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OCTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Dádsela, boba ingeniosa. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | LISEO | |  | | --- | | ¿Y yo a Nise? | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | OCTAVIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Vos también. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | LAURENCIO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Bien merezco esta vitoria, |  | | pues le he dado entendimiento, | 1135 | | si ella me da la memoria |  | | de cuarenta mil ducados. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | PEDRO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y Pedro, ¿no es bien que coma |  | | algún güeso, como perro, |  | | de la mesa de estas bodas? | 1140 | | | |
| |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | | FINEA | |  | | --- | | Clara es tuya. | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Y yo, ¿nací |  | | donde a los que nacen lloran, |  | | y ríen a los que mueren? |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | NISE | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Celia, que fue tu devota, |  | | será tu esposa, Turín. | 1145 | | | |
| |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | | TURÍN | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Mi bota será y mi novia. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | FENISO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Vos y yo sólo faltamos. |  | | Dad acá esa mano hermosa. |  | | | |
| |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | | DUARDO | |  |  | | --- | --- | | Al senado la pedid, |  | | sinuestras faltas perdona; | 1150 | | que aquí, para los discretos, |  | | da fin *La comedia boba*. |  | | | |